

みんなくりポジトリ

国立民族学博物館学術情報リポジトリ National Museum of Ethnology

Ndaa Biy Marva'en : Narrative of a Giziga Pastor

メタデータ	言語: eng 出版者: 公開日: 2009-04-28 キーワード (Ja): キーワード (En): 作成者: 江口, 一久 メールアドレス: 所属:
URL	https://doi.org/10.15021/00002060

Senri Ethnological Reports 27

Ndaa Biy Marva'en

The Narrative of a Giziga Pastor

Paul Kazuhisa Eguchi

National Museum of Ethnology
Osaka, 2002

ABSTRACT

This is the report of interviews with a Biy Marva pastor, conducted in Fulfulde from 1986 to 1993. The Biy Marva group is a northern group of the Giziga. The Giziga are one of the Chadic-speaking peoples living in Northern Cameroon. The topics vary from their daily life and oral tradition to the birth of Christians among them.



Siddi Silas (1942-1993)

Ngam Siddi Silas bee iyaaluuji maako
For Siddi Silas and his family

KAANDINOL

Ndaa deftere nde nde mbinndu-mi haa mi barkifina Pasteer Siddi Silas(1942-93), taa mi yejjita innde maako bee kuugal maako yaake o fonno e duniya. Siddi kam pasteer aartudo haa haykaliiru ye6re teddinan6e Linjiila *Union des Églises Évangéliques Camerounaises (UEE)*. O danyaado hitaande 1942 haa gurel bi'eteengel Moogazan maral Marwa, woyla Kamaru. Alla hoddiri, nyawu kallungu nanngi mo, o maaynaama haa lopital Jaarengol hitaande 1993. Nii ngeendam maako timmiri.

Min fonno ngillootira bee maako daga hitaande 1969. Min ka6di min nafootira nde ngon-mi haa Marwa. Ko o ekkitini yam duuddum. Yaake min ke6no wakkati fuu, min yamyamtindiri haa min 6esda noonde annde fuu. Ammaa mi tonngaayno ko paaydii-mi fuu.

Mi wapake hoosgo sawtu maako nder *magnétophone*. Limgal cassetteji yottan ba ko dillani noggas. O yeewtani yam haala Moogazan'en, no 6e njoodori, al'aadaaji ma66e, no o laatori pasteer, kala ko laarani ngeendam Giziga'en fuu. Sunngullaaji ka6di yam joodaago winnda ko paaydori-moo-mi.

Ndaa wuro Marwa bee Giziga'en kam cenndirtaa bana annduden. Ko semtini yam kam sooynde anndal ma66e. Hikka mi ha66i anniya tonngugo ko pasteer wolwi fuu nder cassetteji di mar-mi ngam taa mi yejjita ngeendam maako.

Mi tammi deftel ngel nafan waran6e 6aawo bee won6e jonta fuu. Ngam duniya fon yaha fergo. Yeeso sedda, dabi'aaji ngayloto. To di ngaylake boo, kiidfi ngejjitaama to winndaaka. Nder dabi'aaji bi'eteedi kiidfi boo, annde nafooje fon jur. Ko ngicf-mi kam derke'en waroo6e 6aawo 6e tawa ko maama'en ma66e dali.

Mi yetti walloo6e bee wallunoo6e yam hiddeko mi wurtina deftel ngel. Miin kam mi limtataako inde ma66e fuu. Ammaa mi wolwanan yoga ma66e, won6e Marwa bee Japon.

Alla yaafu soobaajo meeden Siddi Silas. Alla hinnu mo.

Haa Marwa, nyalaade 17, lewru *février*, hitaande 2000.

Paul Kazuhisa Eguchi

INTRODUCTION

Here is a book I wrote to remember the wonderful time I spent with Pastor Siddi Silas (1942-93), one of the first Northern Cameroonian pastors, in Marwa, Northern Cameroon. Until his sudden death, he worked in the church in Dow Maayo, Marwa, which belongs to the Union of Cameroonian Evangelical Churches.

Since 1969 we used to talk about various subjects whenever we met each other. One day I thought of recording what he told me. I did not record as much as I should have, but I was able to fill about twenty cassettes. The topics vary from his own background to the daily life of his ethnic group. As I stayed among the Ful'be and did not know anything about the life of the Bi Marwa Giziga, I was excited whenever he told me about their life. I was deeply impressed by how he became a Christian. He took me to various churches in Diamaré region. He taught me so much.

First I recorded what he told me for my personal use. After his death, I started thinking of writing down what he had told me. I understand he opened a window for me into the culture and the society of his people. It is the only way to see the inside from the outside of a house. I hope this will be a good introduction to the people who used to be the masters of Marwa before they were driven out. The world is changing every day. Good old traditions are being lost quickly. Both Pastor Siddi Silas and I missed the disappearance of the tradition. Since he was born in a traditional family in Moogazang near Marwa, he knew quite a lot about the tradition and had a great deal of experience that looks unusual to outsiders. This book will be useful also to those who want to know how people used to live in the traditional society. I think this book will be a good start for many people to learn the wisdom from the traditional culture. I feel grateful that Pastor Siddi Silas left a great gift for the generation to come.

At the beginning I intended to write down what he said, and to edit it. But I felt a need to provide a résumé of the main text in Fulfulde for those who do not understand the regional language in Northern Cameroon. The abstract has a lot of limitations. But I tried hard to publish the text as soon as possible, within ten years after his death. The date at the end of verses shows the date of recording.

*Marwa, February 17, 2000
Paul Kazuhisa Eguchi*

CAPPINIRDUM KO WONI NDER DEFTERE

Kaandinol

I. JOODNDE BIY MARVA

1. Asngol **Biy Marva** 2
2. **Degen'en, Məgərmam'en** bee **Mudumtere'en** 2
3. Dugoy'en 2
4. Yiwde **Degen'en** 3
5. Muturuwa 3
6. Mijiviŋ 3
7. Mufu Gudul 3
8. Deerdiraabe Giziga 4
9. Yiwde **Biy Marva** 4
10. Asngol Giziga 7
11. **Biy Marva** walaa hooseere 8

II. NO FULBE COTTINIRI BIY MARVA

12. No Fulbe mbanngiri 8
13. No Giziga'en cottori Marwa 9
14. Kaygamma'en Giziga'en haa saraaki'en laamdo Marwa 11
15. Joodnde Giziga'en 11
16. Gamgamwol 11

III. GIZIGA'EN BEE YIMBE ASLI FEERE

17. Inde asli feere 12
18. **Mbur Plata** bee **mbur babaraŋ** 12
19. Fulbe bee Giziga'en 12
20. Kanuri, Mufu'en, Manndara'en 14
21. Pullo daneejo kam hersum 14
22. Yimbe hersum 15
23. Jawootiral 15
24. **Mesem** 16
25. Mufu'en bee Giziga'en 16
26. Mofu'en haa Moogazaŋ 17
27. Dendootiral bee Matakam'en 18
28. Soobaaku bee Muskun'en 18

TABLE OF CONTENTS(RÉSUMÉ)

Introduction

I. THE STORY OF THE BIY MARVA

1. *Biy Marva* 140
2. *The inhabitants of Marwa* 140
3. *The Dugoy people and others* 140
4. *The origin of the Marwa people* 141
5. *Muturuwa* 141
6. *Mijivi'ng* 141
7. *The Gudul Mufu* 141
8. *The Giziga-speaking people* 142
9. *The origin of the Giziga-speaking people* 142
10. *The Giziga* 142
11. *The Biy Marva* 143

II. HOW THE FUL'BE GOT RID OF THE CHIEF OF MARVA

12. *The first Ful'be who came to Marwa* 143
13. *How the Giziga people had to leave Marwa* 143
14. *The Giziga ministers in the Ful'be court* 144
15. *The Giziga live by mountains but not on top of them* 144
16. *Stone hedge* 144

III. THE GIZIGA AND OTHER ETHNIC GROUPS

17. *Some ethnic groups* 145
18. *The Ful'be* 145
19. *The Ful'be and the Giziga* 145
20. *The Kanuri, the Mufu and the Mandara* 146
21. *A Pullo is a bad omen* 146
22. *Bad luck* 146
23. *Despising other people* 146
24. *Sense of shame* 147
25. *The Mufu and the Giziga* 147
26. *The Mufu in Moogaza'ng* 147
27. *Joking relationship between the Giziga and the Mafa* 148
28. *The Musgum* 148

- 29. Saw'en 19
- 30. Zumaya'en 19
- 31. **Kitikila Biy Magamak** 21
- 32. Yiwde Nasaara 21
- 33. **Misi dugun** 21

IV. SAARE GIZIGA'EN

- 34. Saare 22
- 35. **Gezləŋ** 24
- 36. Kodo 24
- 37. Gartuki saare nastunoodo danngay 25

V. ASAMA, LESDI BEE LADDE

- 38. No asamaa'u daayori 26
- 39. No naange tokkorto 27
- 40. Yimbe les lesdi 27
- 41. Huunyaare nder lesdi 28
- 42. Mojaaki lewru 28
- 43. Mojaaki naange 29
- 44. Pobbi 29
- 45. Paadaaji 29
- 46. Nyiibi 30
- 47. Ledde 30

VI. NYAAMDU BEE NJARAM

- 48. Gawri 31
- 49. Nyaameteeko 31
- 50. Mbal 32
- 51. Defgo mbal 32
- 52. Bilbil 32
- 53. Furdu 33
- 54. **Dalay** 35
- 55. Luumo Moogazan 35
- 56. No tagu nanngirta doombi 35
- 57. No tagu nanngirta lidfi 37
- 58. Ndiyam duuddam donno haa Moogazan 38
- 59. Asngol paaŋi 39
- 60. No tagu nanngirta colli 39
- 61. Diiwgal 40

- 29. *The Sao* 148
- 30. *Zumaya* 149
- 31. *The Biy Magamak rubbish hill* 149
- 32. *Europeans* 150
- 33. *Enemies and love rivals* 150

IV. THE GIZIGA COMPOUNDS

- 34. *Family compounds* 150
- 35. *A hut for domestic animals, with no doorway* 151
- 36. *The visitor* 151
- 37. *The one released from prison* 152

V. THE SKY, THE EARTH, AND THE BUSH

- 38. *Why the sky is high* 152
- 39. *How the sun travels* 152
- 40. *The people living under the ground* 153
- 41. *The turtle under the ground* 153
- 42. *Lunar eclipse* 153
- 43. *Solar eclipse* 153
- 44. *Hyenas* 153
- 45. *Leopards* 154
- 46. *Elephants* 154
- 47. *Tree names* 154

VI. FOODS AND DRINKS

- 48. *Sorghum* 155
- 49. *Edible leaves* 155
- 50. *Alcoholic beverages* 155
- 51. *The preparation of beer* 155
- 52. *Beer* 156
- 53. *Fermented porridge* 156
- 54. *Something in between the porridge and the fermented porridge* 156
- 55. *The Moogaza'ng market* 157
- 56. *How one catches rats* 157
- 57. *How one catches fish* 157
- 58. *There used to be a lot of water in Moogaza'ng* 158
- 59. *Frogs* 158
- 60. *How one catches birds* 158
- 61. *Hunting* 158

62. Fijirde lagaawal 41

VII. PAWNE BANNDU

63. Yaroode 42

64. Moorgo 43

65. Pade 44

66. **Dankici** 44

67. **Zana** 44

68. **Gogor** 44

VIII. KUUDE NDER HITAADE WOORE

69. Duumol 44

70. Dabbunde 45

71. Ceedu 45

72. Daga demal haa codal 45

73. Demal 47

74. Surga 50

75. Kuude ceedu 51

76. **Mosoko** 52

77. Kuugal worbe 52

78. Kuugal rewbe 53

79. **Arasl Biy Marva** 53

80. **Sedege** 53

81. **Muguzlum** 54

82. **Kada sla** 54

IX. SANIYAAJI

83. Sannyooŋe 55

84. Nyootgo limce 56

85. Wannjam'en 57

86. **Misli ishe** 57

87. Kuugal kusel 58

88. Beero 58

89. Annduŋe ledde 59

90. Laarooŋe 59

91. Nguyka 61

92. Yebre wuyŋe haa Giziga'en 61

93. Wammbaaŋe 62

94. Gudi'en 62

95. Gaancoowo 63

62. *Bow and arrow game* 159

VII. *BODY AND CLOTHES*

63. *Scarification* 159

64. *Plaiting hair* 159

65. *Sandals* 159

66. *Shirts without sleeves* 159

67. *Women's clothes* 160

68. *Penis case* 160

VIII. *AGRICULTURAL CALENDAR*

69. *The rainy season* 160

70. *Dry and cold season* 160

71. *The dry season* 160

72. *From planting to harvesting* 161

73. *Cultivation of the field* 161

74. *Communal labor or hulum* 162

75. *The work during the dry season* 162

76. *Dry season sorghums* 162

77. *Men's role is cultivating* 163

78. *Women's work* 163

79. *The Hibiscus Sabdariffa festival and the big festival* 163

80. *Sedege* 163

81. *Festival* 164

82. *The cow festival* 164

IX. *OCCUPATIONS*

83. *Weavers* 164

84. *Tailors* 164

85. *Barbers* 165

86. *Slaughterer* 165

87. *Meat dealer* 165

88. *Bonesetter* 165

89. *Herbalists* 166

90. *Diviners* 166

91. *Theft* 166

92. *The Giziga thieves* 166

93. *Entertainers* 167

94. *Blacksmiths* 167

95. *Wanderers* 167

96. Filu 63

X. GIZIGAARE

- 97. Gizigaare Marwa bee Gizigaare Muturuwa 63
- 98. Caangal 64
- 99. Maŋtoore 65
- 100. Kuudi 66
- 101. **Beke** 66
- 102. Baararaawol 67

XI. TAALI, BALNDI BEE ANNDITANAMJI

- 103. **Mamba** 68
- 104. Jiire woni yoyngel nder taali 70
- 105. “Sada-kusel bee bilkiijo” 70
- 106. “No yimbe kefri gawri” 71
- 107. “No kusel laatori kaaye” 72
- 108. Dawaadi donno piya gawri 73
- 109. “No rawaandu bee jiire ngaadi” 74
- 110. **Mi ngu hur mi** 76
- 111. Annditanamwol 76

XII. ALLA BEE SAYDAAN

- 112. **Biy mulvun** 76
- 113. Alla tagi asama bee lesdi 76
- 114. Pendo wurtaago her duniya 77
- 115. **Koroleme** 77
- 116. **Setene** 77
- 117. Ginnaaji 78
- 118. **Masahay** 78
- 119. Hurgugo yinnaabe 79
- 120. Mistiriijo 79
- 121. Nyaamooɓe yimbe 81

XIII. WAMMBAABE BEE FIJIRDE

- 122. Bammbaado 81
- 123. **Cawal** 82
- 124. Ndaraawu 82
- 125. Tonteere 83
- 126. Bawdi 83
- 127. **Ganjavar** 84

96. *Commerce* 167

X THE GIZIGA LANGUAGE

97. *The Giziga language* 167
98. *Greetings* 168
99. *Eulogy* 169
100. *Abuses* 169
101. *Slaves* 169
102. *Innuendo* 170

XI. FOLKTALES AND RIDDLES

103. *Folktales* 170
104. *A squirrel is a trickster in folktales* 170
105. *"The firefly and the simpleton"* 171
106. *"How men got sorghum"* 171
107. *"How meat became stones"* 171
108. *Dogs used to thresh millet* 171
109. *"The dog and the squirrel"* 172
110. *Proverbs* 172
111. *Riddles* 172

XII. *God and spirits*

112. *Biy mulvun* 172
113. *The creator of the sky and the earth* 173
114. *First human beings* 173
115. *Evil spirit called Koroleme* 173
116. *Satan* 173
117. *Spirits* 174
118. *Masahay* 174
119. *Treatment of mentally ill persons* 174
120. *Misi tir* 174
121. *Man-eaters* 174

XIII. MUSICIANS AND MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS

122. *Musicians* 175
123. *Musical instrument called cawal* 175
124. *The big drum with a single drumhead* 175
125. *Big drum with drumheads on both sides* 176
126. *Drums* 176
127. *Harp* 176

- 128. Googeeru 84
- 129. Luwe 84
- 130. Liikodaaru 85
- 131. Tummude bee zantuuru 85

XIV. INNDEERI, BANGAL BEE MAYIITI

- 132. Siwtuƙe 86
- 133. Jippa-daraayel 87
- 134. Binngel ngel koltoƙel 87
- 135. Binngel gurtiingel bee nyii'e dow 88
- 136. Cinndo 88
- 137. Inndeeri 89
- 138. Inde Giziga'en 90
- 139. Balinngaago 91
- 140. Te'gal 93
- 141. Pade 96
- 142. Gimol ngol muuyooƙe piyiranno gawri 96
- 143. **Sukumdu** 97
- 144. **Madama** 97
- 145. Nanngaado **kuli** 98
- 146. Mayiiti 98
- 147. **Bunahaŋ** 100
- 148. **Cufa** 101
- 149. **Mukosl** 104
- 150. Heƙtugo daliila waade 105

XV. MIIN BEE ÉGLISE

- 151. **Ya mbur Marva** 106
- 152. Lenyol am 106
- 153. Baaba am sarkin paawa no 107
- 154. Moogazaŋ, danyarde am 107
- 155. No mi ƙaŋri debbo am 108
- 156. Innde Fulƙe 109
- 157. No mi laatori pasteer 109
- 158. *École biblique* 113
- 159. Pasteerku 114
- 160. Waazu 115
- 161. Pasteer'en ƙaleeƙe aartuƙe 115
- 162. Pasteer'en *église évangélique* haa lesdi woyla 115
- 163. Katesist'en bee *évangéliste*'en 116

- 128. *Fiddles* 176
- 129. *Horns* 176
- 130. *Flutes* 177
- 131. *Calabashes and musical gourds* 177

XIV. FROM BIRTH TO DEATH

- 132. *Twins* 177
- 133. *Agrippa* 177
- 134. *A boy baby born with one testicle* 178
- 135. *A baby born with upper teeth* 178
- 136. *A person with a sixth finger* 178
- 137. *Naming ceremony* 178
- 138. *Giziga personal names* 179
- 139. *Puberty* 179
- 140. *Marriage* 180
- 141. *Sandals and shoes* 181
- 142. *Song sung by wooers* 181
- 143. *Siblings* 181
- 144. *Adultery* 182
- 145. *The person caught by a magical spell* 182
- 146. *Funeral* 182
- 147. *Bunahan* 182
- 148. *Shroud* 183
- 149. *Possession* 183
- 150. *How people know the cause of someone's death* 184

XV. CHURCH AND I

- 151. *"I'm a Marwa man."* 184
- 152. *My family* 184
- 153. *My father was a butcher* 184
- 154. *Moogaza'ng, my birthplace* 185
- 155. *How I married my wife* 185
- 156. *Assimilation and Fulfulde* 185
- 157. *How I became a pastor* 186
- 158. *Bible School in Jaarengol* 186
- 159. *Ordination as pastor* 187
- 160. *Sermons* 188
- 161. *The birth of the first pastors* 188
- 162. *Fellow pastors in the north* 188
- 163. *Catechists and evangelists* 188

XVI. MISSION JAAREENGOL

- 164. Pasteer'en Nasaara'en wonnooŋe Jaareengol 116
- 165. *Roulet* 116
- 166. *Bible* winndaande bee Fulfulde 117
- 167. Lopital Jaareengol 117
- 168. Rewŋe Nasaara'en joodiiŋe haa Jaareengol 117
- 169. Piyer Bennge bee Madi 118
- 170. Fulfulde ansngol Piyer Bennge'en 118

XVII. ÉGLISE AMIN

- 171. *Église* haa Moogazaŋ 119
- 172. Gimi *église* haa Gayak 119
- 173. Gimi *église* haa Moogazaŋ 130

XVI. MISSION STATION IN JAAREENGOL

- 164. European pastors in Jaareengol 189*
- 165. Mr. Roulet 189*
- 166. New Testament in Fulfulde 189*
- 167. The Jaarenngol hospital 190*
- 168. European women in Jaareengol 190*
- 169. Pierre Benнге and Madi 190*
- 170. Fulfulde spoken by Pierre Benнге and his people 191*

XVII. GIZIGA CHURCHES

- 171. The beginning of a church in Moogaza'ng 191*
- 172. Hymns sung in the Gayak protestant church 191*
- 173. Hymns sung in the Moogaza'ng protestant church 194*

Bibliography

NDAA BIY MARVA'EN

I. JOODNDE BIY MARVA

1. Asngol Biy Marva

Asngol Biy Marva. Biy Marva kam ba wi'go laamdo Marwa bee Gizigaare. Buy kam ba wi'go laamdo. Marva, dum innde wuro. Joonde maŕŕe haa Zokok, Marwa. Baariki doo nii, les hooseere. Jonta kam Fulŕe njaŕti kadi. Mi waawataa wi'go ndeye ŕe njaŕti. Giziga'en kam kuuci sera sera.

(4/3/1986)

2. Degen'en, Məgərmam'en bee Mudumtere'en

Marŕe Marwa kam ŕe mbi'an dum Degen'en, Məgərmam'en¹, Mundumtere'en. Yimŕe tato ŕee. Kamŕe ndarwanto Marwa. Masahay'en. Biy Marva boo kamŕe ngaddi mo, njo"ini mo, ndokki mo laamu. Ammaa lesdi kam naa ndi maako. Yimŕe limtaabe tato ŕe, kamŕe marnoo lesdi man.

Degen'en kam iwŕe Bagarmi. Məgərmam'en bee Mundumtere'en iwŕe lesdi fommбина. Degen'en kam asngol am. Məgərman'en kam asngol debbo am.

Masahay kam mawdo asngol. Asngol fuu bee masahay mum. Gooto boo masahay wi'ete.

(4/3/1986)

3. Dugoy'en

Dugoy kam daga zaman Fulŕe ngaraayno, naa ŕe donno njoodi geŕe geŕe? Dugoy'en don. Konngola'en don. Kodek'en don. Balaza'en don. Kamŕe ŕen kadi njoodno lesdi doo.

(4/3/1986)

¹ ə, dum shewa.

4. Yiwde **Degeŋ**'en

Hiddeko **Degeŋ**'en njotto Marwa doo, 6e yiwi Bagarmi.

Yowwaa, 6e don ngara, 6e don ngara haa 6e tayi maayo, 6e ngari. Be njotti Balda. Hooseere Balda doo, 6e njoodi ton. Be njoodi sedda, 6e yeewi hooseere Marwa.

Suy, 6e ngari. Be njoodi haa Digir. Be paɓɓi sedda. Be yummi Digir, 6e tokkiri Yammbaram doo nii, 6e nasti lesdi Marwa kadi. **Yam baran** kam ba wi'go ndiyam ndaneejam bee Gizigaare. Be ngari 6e njoodi haa Zokok. **Zokok** doo ba wi'go: "En ɓil kuuje men." Zokok doo ɓilgo huunde non. Be kodi don kadi. Be njoodi.

(4/3/1986)

5. Muturuwa

Muturuwa kam dum innde godɗo. Mo wurtini asngol man.

(4/3/1986)

6. Mijiviŋ

Viŋ kam ba wi'go suudu. **Mijiviŋ** kam ba wi'go turoowo suudu. Be turan suudu 6e kaɓɓa looci. Be tiita 6e timmina. Be yowa dow suudu.

(4/3/1986)

7. Mufu Gudul

Minin kam min mbi'ata Gudul. Ammaa wofɓe boo mbi'ata Gudur. Mi don nana habaru maɓɓe kadi. Dagam ɓooyma kamɓe kam 6e don. Be yimɓe marɓe semmbe non masin. Be donno laamorde maɓɓe mawnde haa ton haa Gudul man. A yi'i, haa Giziga'en don mbi'a maa, to godɗo yidaa wurtaago yaasi meere meere doo, 6e don mbi'a mo: "Aan kam **biy Gudul** naa?" Laamɗo maɓɓe wurtataa meere meere haa yaasi. Don nder suudu tum. Kuuje fuu don.

Yoo, kamɓe marino gal lesdi Gudul man haa Mokoŋ. ɓooyma

laamdo Mokoŋ doo, kambe mari. Jotta Mokoŋ don dow buuwol. Be ngadi dabare bee Nasaara'en, be njafti laamu man non. Sinaa non kam, ɓooyma kam Gudul mari Mokoŋ kadi. Mari lesdi duufndi sam. Be don haa hiirnaange lesdi Marwa kadi. To a yehi Mokoŋ, ndaaraa kadi gal wakeere woyla Mokoŋ gal loowi kooseje ton kadi. Ton be ngonni. Ton kam haa yotti Mokoŋ haa wadi keerol bee gal lesdi Meri too. Fuu dum kambe mari. To a yi'i be nii, mbi'aa Giziga'en goo. Be don yara boo bana Giziga'en. Wolde maɓɓe boo don nanndi bee wolde Giziga. Be don mbi'a be Gudul'en.

Gudul, Manndaya'en doo, dum fuu dum heernootiri bee lesdi Cuvuk. Cuvuk don haa yeeso maɓɓe.

Cuvuk'en boo keerol maɓɓe wadi gal yimbe lesdi Sulede'en too, lesdi gal Zamay.

Gudul'en marino lesdi duufndi. Be don mbi'a maa gal lesdi hiirnaange gal wakeere hiirnaange man ton doo, kambe ɓen diirti, wodɓe maɓɓe njehi Muturuwa. Yehi wadi asli gal ton. Be don mbi'a maa, daga Gudul Muturuwa'en kam yummi, njehi Muturuwa.

Saa'i man Fulbe siwaa sam.

(25/2/1993)

8. Deerdiraabe Giziga

Yiwde wi'eteeɓe Giziga jonta kam fuu gal Bagarmi ton nii. Be don mbi'a kambe boo be deerdiraabe. Gooto maɓɓe yehi joodoyi haa Muturuwa. Gooto boo joodi haa doo.

Mijiviŋ woodi Giziga'en. Munndaŋ'en ngari tawi be ton. Munndaŋ'en kam Leere be yummi be ngari. Giziga'en kam wootɓe boo be ngari haa doo. Be deerdiraabe. Be tato be be ɓiɓɓe gooto. Gooto, Muturuwa. Gooto, Mijiviŋ. Gooto boo Marwa. Kambe ɓiɓɓe tato be, be njo"ini berniji man.

(4/3/1986)

9. Yiwde Biy Marva

Giziga'en haa ngara lesdi ndi doo, Balda be aarti joodaago.

Mi anndaa ko haɗi be joodaago haa Balda. A yi'i, yeeso yeeso be daɓɓiti kadi? Ban be mbi'ata kam, be ngari be njoodi ton. A'aa, bee

Muskun'en 6e yummodi, 6e ngardi ton, koo noye mi anndaa kadi. Be njoodi ton. Nde 6e njoodi ton, 6e yeewi hooseere Marwa, 6e mbi'i: "Hooseere mawnde don haa too. En ndillu yeeso."

Suy, 6e ngari **Mijil** doo, 6e njoodi ton boo, duubi. Nde 6e cafti joodaago ton, 6e yummi, 6e daɓɓiti wargo Marwa doo kadi. Be tokkiri gal Yammbaramje doo nii. Be taari, 6e taari, 6e taari haa 6e njotti Marwa. Be njehi 6e njoodi haa Zokok. Be mbi'i: "Jotta doo, en ɓil kuuje men haa doo, **zhikuk**² nii." Fuu 6e ɓili kadi kuuje. A yi'i, naa cuuci ngalaa tawon kadi? Bili kuuje maɓɓe haa ledde ledde'en, dume dume.

Suy, ton 6e canngini 6e njoodi. Ton 6e nanngi babal kadi, 6e pe"i, 6e njoodi haa dum yaalti boodfum kadi. Be don njoodi, 6e don njoodi. A yi'i, Giziga'en doo, ban 6e mbi'ata kamɓe kam laamɗo maɓɓe, to 6e lammini nii, asaweere, asaweeje didi, tati, feere kam maaya. Kadiboo, 6e ngada godɗo, non. Be ngada feere, non.

Suy, fotootiri, 6e mbi'i woodi godɗo mo 6e tawi haa Marwa doo. O loohoowo no, dagam daayɗum o ummi. O wari o don fida. Haa deydey ɓaawo Gojomoore gal luggere too doo, ton o woni. O don nder kooraaje too, o don fida. A yi'i, haa luggere man doo bee ndiyam no. Be mbi'i ndiyam maajam duuddam. Dam don seefa haa ndiyam feere wara tawa.

Suy, rewɓe don njaha nyada ton.

Yowwaa, suy, on boo fida. To fida bana lelwa'en dume dume doo, sakkinaana 6e. Bojel, sakkinaana 6e. Rewɓe kooca njaara ndefa. Tokki tokki haa worɓe maɓɓe yami kadi: "Onon, moy hokkata on kusel doo?" Be mbi'i: "Naa woodi godɗo feere don joodi haa ɓaawo hooseere doo, kommbi ndiyam doo, o don nder kooraaje ton, fida. Kanko hokkata min kusel." "Ayyee?" "Ooho." "Boodfum kadi. Nden kam en ngadɗiiɗgal nyannde kazaa. Ngaden diiɗgal." A yi'i, diiɗgal maɓɓe, 6e ngadɗa foroy kam, nyannde jum'aare. Bana alamiisa mangariba doo, 6e puufa luwe tuuɗ. To buusawji luwe doo, 6e puufa, 6e ngooka, ilina. **Tulum**³ kamɓe kam 6e mbi'ata kam. To 6e puufi ban nii doo, 6e ngooki, ilini bana mangariba, hannde, alamiisa, 6e anndi jum'aare janngo kam diiɗgal dawan kadi. Mo"inaana, hannde, mardo dawaadi hokka lekki haa dawaadi mum haa nannga kusel. Woodi ledde maɓɓe 6e ngadɗa. To rawaandu yi'i kusel nii, walaa accugo kadi. Sey to mbari. Annduɓe lekki man don.

² **Luwanj** kam ɓil. **Zhikuk** kam jur.

³ **Tulum** kam luwal mannga. **Fogom** kam luwal peetel.

Waawɓe haala man don. Godɗo boo anndaa, sey rooko non.

Jawmu rawaandu kam yarataa lekki. On kam suurnan cabbi maako bee lekki feere don kadi. Be cuurna. To fidi, kusel wurti, ban lelwa, to sakkini nii, do" ataa dow lesdi kadi, sey dow lelwa. Walla boo kooba, walla boo, hamfurde. Nii kadi. Ko wurti fuu. Kal nii dow man non. Do" ataa lesdi kam, to ɓe cuurni kam.

Yowwaa, ɓe ngada.

Suy, nyannde man to ɓe puufi luwe, ɓe mbi'a: "Jam waali fajiri cup, ngurtooden bee diiwgal, en taara hooseere ndee, haa ndaaren ko woni godɗo gondo ton doo."

Suy, ɓe ngurti fajiri cup. Be puufi luwe. Dawaadi mboyi.

Yowwaa, suy, ɓe ngurti kadi, ɓe taari hooseere man. Tokki taari nde.

Suy, ɓe ngurtini godɗo goo, hayaa hayaa. "Ndaa godɗo, ndaa godɗo, ndaa godɗo."

Suy, ɓe nanngi mo kap. Be mbi'i mo: "Noye?" "Aa, miin kam mi don doɗɗon nii. Mi pidoowo. Miin kam mi gawjo." Alla anndi gal toye o yummi o wari.

Yoo, ɓe mbi'i: "Ko jo"ini maa kadi haa ladde? A yahataa haa nder wuro doo?" O wi'i yoo: "Naa mi jananno? Mi anndaa lesdi ndi. Miin kam." "Ayyee?" "Ooho." "Nden kam war kooten maa nder wuro." Be koori mo nder wuro kadi. Be ndokki mo suudu. O don joododi bee maɓɓe, o joododi bee maɓɓe, haa haa duuri.

Suy, ɓe mbi'i kadi: "En ndokku mo lee debbo, hannde nde o don bee amin. O koco amin. Hannde o don joododi bee amin jamum kam. En ndokku mo lee debbo." Be ndokki mo fiɗɗo maɓɓe. O ɓaɓi. Be don ndanyda kadi.

Yowwaa, tokki tokki tokki, Giziga'en goo, a yi'i, hakkunde maɓɓe to lammini godɗo nii maaya non goo. Be mbi'i: "Jotta doo, godɗo men mo en tawi haa ladde doo, ngartirden haa wuro doo, en ndokku mo laamu. Ndaaren kanko boo maayan naa, maayataa." Be mbi'i mo: "Aan kam a laamɗo kadi. Minin boo min **masahay**'en."

Masahay kan kanko darwanta lesdi kadi? Oo boo wadfa *proposition* non.

Yowwaa, nii non, oya goo maayaay. Laamu maako gasi nii non. Tokki tokki tokki haa laamu maako ɓenndi yaalti boodɗum. Be don njoodi kadi. Ammaa bee man fuu, to ɓe mbi'i ɓe ngidɗa mo, ɓe ngurtina mo, walla ɓe ɓorta mo, walla ɓe kooca ɓiyiiko, walla boo hannde, godɗo asngol maako, nii lamminanno. Tokki haa duubi kadi. Haa Fulɓe ngari tawi ɓe.

Naa Mufu. Koo Mundaɗ, koo godɗo asngol toye, ɓe mbi'aay min godɗo lesdi kazaa kam. Ammaa teema gal fommɓina ɗoo nii o warti kam.

(10/1/1993)

10. Asngol Giziga

Giziga boo asngol peetel ɗon caka Marva'en ɗoo. Be ɗon mbi'a ɓe Giziga. Kamɓe kadi. Jotta kam ɓe kawti yimɓe fuu haa asngol man. Ammaa haa amin kam *en général* kam ɓe ɗon mbi'a **Marva hay**. Giziga kam ɓe ngaringari non.

Ammaa Marva'en goo ndokki laamu maɓɓe. To ɓe lammini laamɗo fuu, faɓɓataa maaya, faɓɓataa maaya, faɓɓataa maaya.

Nden, ɓe tawi Gizigaajo ɗoo, donno fida kusel haa Mojogomoore ɗoo, ɓaawo hooseere her *gouverneur* woni ɗoo nii, ton Gizigaajo joodi. **Mwa Gojomo**. **Mwa** naa hooseere? **Gojomo** boo mi anndaa kadi dume saawi nder ton. Mi yamaay.

Yoo, ndiyam donno haa maayel ɓaawo hooseere.

Suy, ɓe ngadi diiwgal. Nde ɓe njehi bee dawaadi, cabbi maɓɓe. Rewɓe anndini ɓe boo woodi godɗo haa kooraaɓe. Les hooseere ɗoo woodi godɗo ɗon ton ɗon fida kusel, sakkinana rewɓe. Rewɓe kooca.

Suy, rewɓe maatini haa wuro kadi, mbi'i woodi godɗo haa kooraaɓe ɗoo nii, godɗo ɗon ton.

Suy, Giziga'en ngurtini loohngal kadi. Be taari kooseyel man bee dawaadi maɓɓe bee cabbi maɓɓe.

Suy, sedda nii godɗo wurti nder kooraaɓe ɗoo bee ɓaaru maako bee lagaawal.

Suy, ɓe tawi mo. Be mbi'i: mo: "Dume ngadataa? Noye innde maa?" Mi anndaa innde ndeye o hokki ɓe. Ammaa ɓe kooci mo. Be mbi'i mo: "War. Kuucen wuro." Be koori mo. Be njehi ɓe ndokki mo debbo. O danydi ɓiɓɓe bee debbo man.

Suy, Giziga'en goo ngadi laamɗo maɓɓe nii, laamɗo goo faɓɓataa maaya, faɓɓataa maaya. Faɓɓataa tum ban nii. Waatoo, **Marva hay** goo.

Nden, ɓe mbi'i: "Jotta kam kofɗo mo min ngartiri nder wuro ɗoo, en ndokku mo laamu. En ndaara lee kanko boo maayan naa maayataa."

Suy, ɓe ndokki mo laamu.

Suy, dum tabiti non. Maayaay, ammaa waawataa tayugo kiita kadi. Kanko yama 6e. To o yidi wadgo huunde, o yama: "Noye ngadan-mi?" Be mbi'a mo: "Tokku nii, tokku nii."

Suy, o tokki ko 6e mbi'i mo kadi.

Nden, asngol maako don duuda. Don danya fikkon.

Yoo, to o maayi, 6e kooca caka fikkon maako doo, 6e laama. To laamu maajum fottanaay 6e, 6e 6orta mo. Haa ton, asngol Biy Marva wanngi kadi.

Be mbi'i Gizigaajo kam walaa hooseere. Ngam 6e wariwari haa 6aawo.

(4/3/1986)

11. Biy Marva walaa hooseere

Biy Marva kam walaa hooseere. Kanko kam o wariwari, 6e ndokki mo laamu. O he6aay hooseere.

Feere kam ndaa hooseere don. Ndaa Bulooore, hooseere **Məgərmam hay**⁴, ndaa **mwa Kozlej**. Doo kam **Degenre**. **Mundumtere** haa jimmiti gal Dobba too. Doo boo hooseere **Mundumtere**'en.

Saalake Muturuwa kam Giziga'en ngalaa. Keerol kadi. Doo boo yahataa Manndara. Giziga'en haadi doo. Gal doo boo saalataako Bogo.

(4/3/1986)

II. NO FULBE COTTINIRI BIY MARVA

12. No Ful6e mbanngiri

Nde Ful6e ngari haa Marwa kam, 6e mbeerni 6e haa Dow Maayo. Be don njoodi.

Yoo, suy, Ful6e goo don te'a fikkon ma66e, suy, 6e don njillootira nii, 6e don 6esda. Be anndaa gal toye Ful6e goo ngardata.

Suy, 6e mbi'i: "Asee Ful6e kam nder waande nii ngurti. Nder waande 6e nguroto, 6e mbannga."

⁴ **Məgərmam hay** kam **Məgərmam**'en.

Haa jotta 6e ndarni Pullo kam daga waande wurti. Waande fuu.
Daga ton wurti. Nii Giziga'en kam mbi'ata.

(27/1/1992)

13. No Giziga'en cottori Marwa

Bana ndotti'en Giziga mbi'ata kam Ful6e ngari, tawi Giziga'en. Be yami 6e babal haa 6e njoodo. Be bee na'i ma66e. Be duroo6e. Giziga'en ndokki 6e pallel haa dow maayo Marwa. Don 6e njoodino.

Ful6e na'i aartu Moodibbo Damraka wargo. Nde Ful6e goo don njoodi ton, Giziga'en donno laami dow Ful6e goo. Nden, ha6re fuddi caka ma66e. Be don ka6a. Foroy Giziga'en donno njaala Ful6e goo, suy, Ful6e goo tawi wadtaako. Be neli haa Nijeriya, 6e ewnoyi Moodibbo Damraka. Be mbi'i mo: "Haa o wara. Minin kam min don njoodi haa lesdi Marwa, ammaa min don les baawde Giziga'en. Fitina duudi. Min anndaa e min ngoni."

Yoo, moodibbo Damraka boo wari kadi. Wari honi Giziga'en goo bee dabareeji maako bee mallumku maako, bee dume dume fuu. Be cottini Giziga'en kadi. Biy Marva goo kuuci Moogazaŋ yehi joodi haa laamorde dow hooseere Moogazaŋ. Dow hooseere Moogazaŋ woodi pallel man 6e don mbi'a laamorde ton. Joodi wadi duubi tati, 6e don ka6a bee Ful6e goo. Ha6re accaay sam.

Suy, 6aawo duubi tati, 6e cottini **Biy Marva** goo jippi yehi haa Caki Je6e goo joodoyi. Caki Je6e gal laawol Meri too.

Yowwaa, nde joodi ton, ha6re accaay 6e. Be taasni bee ha6re. O hooti haa Magdeme haa lesdi Manndara. Ton boo Manndara'en marinoo. Laamdo Manndara soobaajo maako. Be njoododi ton duubi. Be anndaa duubi noy. Luural wadi hakkunde ma66e. O tawi laamdo Manndara goo boo nder konu bee Kirdi Mura'en don ka6a.

Yoo, nde **Biy Marva** goo boo don walla mo ha6re, yaha nannga Kirdi Mura goo hokka laamdo. O wi'a: "Ndaa konne'en maa."
Laamdo Manndara hooa.

Suy, rew6e fuddi yimdugo laamdo goo, **Biy Marva** goo. Be acci teddingo laamdo Manndara goo.

Suy, on boo 6ernde mum naawi. Be luuri, ngadi haala.

Suy, o warti o joodi Dulek doo nii, haa lesdi Meri jotta doo. Ton 6e ngadi laamorde ma66e. Don joodi, don joodi, don joodi. Haa Nasaara'en boo ngari kadi. Be ngari. Ammaa Jaaman wari.

Yoo, 6e don njoodi, 6e don njoodi, 6e don njoodi. O fuddi teftugo wartugo gaa'en kadi. Gal Marwa doo. O wara kanko boo. Be mbi'a: "Jum'aare fuu, o wara." **Biy Marva** goo silmaay. O wara o saana non kadi. O saana Nasaara haa *bureau*, huuca. Teema non ngadanno 6ooyma. Mi anndaa. Koo to, kanko on waranno feere maako non, saana non, mi anndaa kadi. Haa haala man hefti kadi. Nasaara yami: "Oo moy kanko boo?" Be mbi'i: mo: "Naa maama maako'en marunoo lesdi doo? Kanko wi'ete **Biy Marva**." "Yoo, asee nii naa?" Nasaara fuddi annditigo mo, haa 6e ngeewtidi. O yami mo warta.

Nden, o maayi. Dum baaba Usmaana.

Nden, o maayi, 6e yami mo. Be mbi'i o warta Marwa o joodo doo. Be kultori Ful6e goo, 6e mbaawaay wartugo. Ngam waade baaba doo laabaay. Be don ceka 6e ciiri mo siiri siiri kadi. Ba laamdo Marwa Pullojo siiri mo, hokki mo limce. Limce man doo, 6e mbi'i 6e meedaay yi'go de.

Suy, neli suka maako bee limce man, yaarani mo. Laamdo jafi de, feeri limce man nii, o wi'i taa 6e nastina saare maako. Be njaari haa suka maako. A yi'i 6ooyma 6e cigoto limceeji ma66e haa nder beembal? Yaari haa beembal, nden, janngo man nii, yiite wanngi diga beembal. Hayaa hayaa hayaa, nyaami fattude fuu. Fattude pat wuli. Be anndaa boo no yiite maajum yumtori.

Nden, laamdo goo wi'ata 6e: "Yiite nge ngi'don nyaami wuro doo, naa wodnge feere. Ammaa limce 6e ngadduno keenya goo, kanje de yummini yiite goo, wuli fattude doo."

Yoo, 6e don njoodi. Sarti 6e ndokkuno mo warta Marwa goo boo badi, suy, o nyawi. Nyawgo naa nyawu naawngu, suy, hunnde man fiyi mo bana piyal non, do"i maayi non. Nyalde non.

Nden, o dali 6i66e wor6e tato bee saare. Gooto boo Usmaana, dido 6e kam mi anndaa innde ma66e.

Nden, habaru warti Marwa doo kadi haa Nasaara'en goo. Be mbi'i sarti 6e ndokkuno laamdo boo wadi, o waraay. Be mbi'i: "Naa laamdo kam maayi? **Biy Marva** kam maayi?" "O dalaay 6ikkon naa?" "O dali 6i66e tato." "Nden kam 6e ngarta. Gooto ma66e joodo."

Suy, 6e cali wartugo. Be njoodi haa Dulek ton kadi. Nii non haa *indépendance* wadi tawri 6e nii non. Be cali wartugo. Jotta 6e don sera sera non kadi.

Biy Marva don haa Dulek. Ammaa o joodi ba jawrojo non kadi. Be kooci laamu man 6e ndokki Pullo, bi'etedo Babe. Babe boo maccudo laamdo Marwa. Kanko mari Dulek. Babe kam suka lawan

Salman no. Babe joodi joodnde maako. Nde *indépendance* wadi, 6e cennditi laamu Marwa ge6e ge6e ge6e. Dulek boo warti laamu tuutawal. Babe laami laamu tuutawal, joodi jokki.

Be cenndi lesdi Marwa. Ndaa Kaliyaw. Be deerdifraa6e baaba gooto.

Yowwaa, Kaliyaw bee **Biy Marva** kam deerdifraa6e. On boo joodi laamdo haa Kaliyaw. Joodiido laamdo jotta kam jawroojo nonnon. Nde 6e 6orti laamdo Kaliyaw, Yuguda, 6e ngartiri mo 6e njo"ini mo haa Kaliyawre haa Marwa doo haa dow maayo. Be kooci jawro Bilgim. Bilgim boo lesdi Giziga'en. Jawroojo maako no. Be koori mo 6e lammini mo haa joodnde maako.

Yoo, woodi jawroojo feere haa Hulum. **Biy Hulum** 6e mbi'ata. On boo o laami laamu tuutawal kadi.

(4/3/1986)

14. Kaygamma'en Giziga'en haa saraaki'en laamdo Marwa

To goddo maayi, laamdo maayi, kam6e 6e ndarnata 6e. Be don mbi'a dum asngol kaygamma'en. Kaygamma'en boo 6e Giziga'en luttunoo6e 6en 6e ngurtaakino. Yaasi wuro bee laamdo ma66e. Ammaa 6e lutti haa Marwa, 6e njoododi bee Ful6e, kam6e 6en cubata ndokka laamu haala. Be lamminta laamdo keso. Nii mi nanata haa ma66e kadi. Doo kam wurti al'aada Giziga'en kadi.

(4/3/1986)

15. Joodnde Giziga'en

Giziga'en njoodtaako dow hooseere nii. Les hooseere nii, tawan 6e. Badi hooseere kadi. Ngam wongo 6ooyma, to pucci ngari boo, ndogga, mba"ito hooseere law, taa Ful6e ke6a dabare dow ma66e. Dabare doggugo.

(4/3/1986)

16. Gamgamwol

Minin kam min ma66iti gite amin dum don. Baabaaji amin'en

boo tawi dum don. Ammaa ɓe mbi'i ngam hadgo pucci. Tata pucci nasta, njaha kona ɓe doo. Ban nii, taari taari hooseere doo, taari fuu. Be mahi haa towi. Bee kaaye. Haa ton ɓe mbarata Fulɓe kadi. Pullo yaha nii, ɓe tappa mo. Sukaabe don ayna. Fulɓe boo ngidi yahgo mbi'a haa kona ɓe. Taa ɓe mbara ɓe. Nii non.

(10/1/1993)

III. GIZIGA'EN BEE YIMBE ASLI FEERE

17. Inde asli feere

Mifkin kam Sirataajo. Mbur **Wandala** boo Manndaraajo. Mbur **Badawoya** boo Suwaajo. **Mbana** boo Munndanjo. **Doore** kam Tupuriijo. **Bananna** kam Banannaajo. **Baynawa** kam Baynawaajo. Mbur **Sara** kam Saraajo. **Kotoko** kam Kotokoojo. **Muzuk** kam Muskunjo. **Muzuk** kam ɓe don ɓadootira bee maɓɓe. **Mbur Muzuk, Muzuk hay. Mbur Hurza. Mbur Muyaŋ. Mada.** Mboku'en. Meri. Doo kam fuu anndi kadi lee. Sey Podoko'en ɓe mi anndaa ɓe boodfum bee yimɓe Tala Mokolo.

(25/2/1993)

18. Mbur Plata bee mbur babaraŋ

Mbur Plata kam Pullo. Malla boo **mbur Ngaɓa** wi'ete. **Plata hay** kam Fulɓe.

Nasaara kam **mbur babaraŋ**. Goddo daneejo. **Babaraŋ hay** kam Nasaara'en. **Babaraŋ hay soko le.** Waatoo, raneɓe ngari. **Mbur babaraŋ a so le** kam ba wi'go daneejo wari.

(4/3/1986)

19. Fulɓe bee Giziga'en

Fuɗdam kam, nde ɓe ngari ɓe tawi min kam narral donno sedda. Be ndokki ɓe haa ɓe njoodo kadi. Be lattake hodɓe amin. Naa ɓe don njoodi?

Nden, ɓe keɓi ɓe ndaari, ɓe ngasi, ɓe keɓi semmbe, ɓe puɗɗi

tuurtango Giziga'en kadi. Naa narral wadaaki kadi daga ton? Latti konne'en.

Suy, Gizigaajo faami Pullo yidi jaɗtugo mo, naa bee dabare? Koo naa bee semmbe boo bee dabare nii? Bee dabare dabare, haa yotti ɓe ngurtini Giziga'en kadi. Kanjum wadi Gizigaajo don wi'a: "Hannde, to a soobri bee Pullo, dum sooynde godɗo nii wadi maa. Sooynde godɗo. Ngam a heɓaay godɗo feere. Nden, coobraa bee Pullo. Sinaa non kam Pullo kam dum soobrataake kadi. Ammaa kadi to a heɓaay godɗo feere, a ɗaɓɓiti, a ɗaɓɓiti a somi, walaa mo keɓɗaa, koocaa Pullo non kadi ba laaraay non. Coobron."

Naa silmuɓe Giziga'en don te'a Fulɓe? Naa ɓe ngidi nastindirgo bee maɓɓe kadi? Nasta caka maɓɓe? Burna wodɓe kam pat cilmi. Silmuɓe don ɓaɗa rewɓe Fulɓe kadi, ɓiɓɓe Fulɓe, ndanyda.

Uzul mo juulataa kam te'ataa Fulɓe. Caddum. Meedaay yi'go. Mo silmaay non sam te'i Pullo? Mi yi'aay. Pullo yidaa, kanko boo yidaa. Worɓe Fulɓe kam don te'a rewɓe Giziga'en. Biɓɓe Giziga'en, Fulɓe don te'a. Naa ɓe cilminan kadi? To ɓe te'i nii, naa ɓe nasti nder Silaama? To Pullo te'i Gizigaajo, naa o silmi?

To Pullo wari jooɗi sika? Ban haa yolnde maa, to woodi leggal ngal njoodorton, ɓikkon don ngara njooɗo ton, aan boo a don jooɗo ton, babal hiirde mon, Pullo wari jooɗi ton kam, to Pullo wayliti nii, huuci, yummake doo, sey, ngaddon yiite, poornon kadi. Min don mbi'a kamɓe kam nyawu don har maɓɓe. Nyawuuji maajum boo ndaaɓan.

Yoo, tata nyawu man raaba yimɓe kadi. Be ngula bee yiite hiddeko ɓikkon njooɗo ton. Tinaa non kam ɓe tappan ɓinngel, maa ɓe piya. To jooɗi non non, sey reena. Ndotti'en mbi'a kadi: "Ngaddee yiite." Be njamna yiite kadi. Be ngara ɓe poorna babal man, hiddeko ɓe nduɗana ɓikkon njooɗo kadi. Rewɓe, koo ɓeye ɓeye fuu. Sinaa non kam ɓe njooɗtaa babal man.

Giziga'en nyaamdataa bee Fulɓe. To Pullo wari, ɓe ndokka mo nyiiri maako feere. Pullo don laara ba yidaa don yawo Giziga'en, nyaamdataa bee maɓɓe. Gizigaajo boo jaɓataa. Dum jawootirdum kadi.

(7/2/1992)

20. Kanuri, Mufu'en, Manndara'en

Naa ɓadi doɗɗon ɓe ngari haa lesdi ndi? Hannde kam ɓe don coobootira. Ammaa ɓooyma kam ɓe ngalaa don haa lesdi ndi kam sam. Sirata kam **Mifkin**. Sey Pullo bee Gizigaajo bee Mufu'en. Ndikka maa Mufu'en kam don gal dow kooseje Giziga'en bee Mufu'en kam don coobootira. Narral don hakkunde wodɓe Giziga'en bee Mufu'en kam. A yi'i? Kamɓe boo ɓe don geɓe, geɓe? Wodɓe narran bee amin. Wodɓe boo narrataa.

Bana yimɓe Duvangar'en ɓe, yimɓe gal Durum, Wazaŋ, Duvangar doo fuu, doo kam narran bee amin. Mufu'en kam **Mufu hay**.

Yoo, woodi wonɓe gal Manndara, gal Mboku nii doo, doo boo narrataa kadi. Don kam haɓre don hakkunde maɓɓe bee Giziga'en doo. Bee Manndara ɓooyma kam naa ɓe soobiraaɓe? Manndaraajo bee Gizigaajo soobran. Laamɓe maajum maa soobruno haa, a yi'i, nde Bi Marva wurti Marwa, a yi'i, naa huuci Manndara? Haa Manndara doo, haa soobaaajo mum o yehi kadi. O yehi o joodoyi. Manndara ton bee Manndaraajo man, laamɗo. Manndara'en⁵ aarti silmugo dow Giziga'en du?

Manndara kam **Wandala**.

(7/2/1992)

21. Pullo daneejo kam hersum

Pullo daneejo tal doo, naa jaɓataa maa fottugo bee maako? To a laari mo don saalo, sey, celaa laawol. Accanaa mo laawol maako⁶.

To a fotootiri bee maako, a aartiraay godɗo feere, kanko aartudaa laargo kam, naa a heɓataa saa'a? To jahaangal njahannodaa maa, jahaangal maa wartan meerewal non non. Koo ko keɓataa. Maa boo tum, aan kam a don nder asar non nii, asar non nii, haa naange muta. Kanjum, ɓe njaɓataa.

(7/2/1992)

⁵ **Wandala hay** boo Manndara'en.

⁶ **Misi viya** kam hersumjo.

22. Yimbe hersum

Saa'a dum don gal wakeere woodnde kadi. Hersum boo gal wakeere woodaay.

Hersumjo don.

Asli yimbe man har amin kam maa don. Bango be maa be kadan. Ban ndotti'en kam. To a faji gidfo ma66e debbo, be ndiiwete maa wuro ma66e kam fuu. Be mbi'a: "Wurta don. A waddi hersumjo haa lesdi."

Woodi asngol be ngidaa fango'en. **Mustada**. Asngol **Mustada** doo, Giziga'en kam be ngidaa fango be. Naane kam. Hannde kam be don fana.

Yoo, woodi asngol **Movo**'en, **Vavala**'en, be mbi'ata. Ben boo be fanaataa be. To a faji nii, aan kam sey a wurta wuro man kam pat.

To faji nii hersum. Hitaande maa to aawi gawri maa, gildi wara nyaama pat, ba hikka doo.

Sike, be njawi Fulbe man maa. Be mbi'a: "Pullo daneejum tal tal doo, woodaay. Taa naaru mo. Taa laar mo fajiri fajiri sam. Wadan hersum."

(6/1/1992)

23. Jawootiral

Yawootirgo kam don. Woodi yawiibe yimbe naa bana Giziga'en naa? Koo moy fuu be njawa dum non. Walaa, nii, godfo, hannde, haa ma66e nii, be ndaara nii furi be kam naa walaa? Yawa-tagle'en kadi. Be njawan yimbe. Pullo maa be njawa dum. Mufuujo maa be njawa dum. Sinaa Nasaara kam be meedaay yawgo mo.

Bananna be njawan dum. Be mbi'an: "Waancoo6e dubbe meere, be cuurataako." Nii nii.

Fulbe boo yimbe hayam non tan. Duppu6e. Way, faasiki'en, naa nii non tan? To bernde naawi kam daneejo tal boo **beke** non.

(10/1/1993)

Yawaare kam don hakkunde ma66e. Tum nii non.

(25/2/1992)

24. Mesem

Mesem kam mesem non nii. To a wadi hunnde jee haandaay, hunnde haanaay wadeego, a wadi, a yi'i, 6e kudafan? Hannde, 6e kufda innde maa. Be kude. Be nyo'e. "Ndaa wayne wadi hunnde kazaa. Huunde nde haanaay wadeego." Walla, a fuuti gite esa. Walla, a wujji hunnde, hannde, nder fattude. Maa boo, hannde, 6e nanngi maa, hannde, ngam daliila nyamaande'en. A waawaay yobgo. A don. Hooya kuuje yimbe non. A wartirtaa sam ba faasikiijo goo. Be ngara 6e nanngi. Be ka66e. Haa fattude fuu laara. Be ngurtine saare maa. Be njaare yolnde laamdo. Naa mesem naa? Kanjum wi'ete mesem.

Nyaamgo haa gite yimbe. Nyaamgo haa yeeso esum. Gizigaajo kam wadtaa dum. Sam. Nyaamataa gite, hannde, semtete6e. Wadtaa hunnde nii nde yimbe njalata dum haa itta mo neddaaku. Don ayni hoore maako kadi. Sey to 6uri semmbe. Doo kam wadfan? Accident kam naa wadfan koo ndeye? Nii, tinaa non kam mesem.

Ndaa hunnde man. O yidi dum. To dum cementudum kam o yamataa kadi. O yidaa. Mesem.

Gizigaajo wi'i yoo: "Mesem a kida ngos tu hur." Bana wi'go: "Semteende mbari debbo reedujo."

Yoo, ndaa hunnde, o yidi hunnde man, o semti yamgo. Haa suuno man wari mbari mo. Booyima, warti ban taalol non kadi jotta kam.

Be ngimda: "Wayne wadi nii. Wayne wadi nii. Hunnde nde haanaay wadeego wadi. Ndaa nii nii nii nii." A yi'i, asngol fuu semtan. A yi'i, lenyol pat semti kadi? A yi'i naa cementudum? Be ngidaa.

Nastugo nder danggay woodaay. Ammaa 6e don nasta boo? To 6uri maa semmbe, he6aay kam, noye? To gooto wadi hunnde, lenyol pat semtan. Woodaay.

(10/1/1993)

25. Mufu'en bee Giziga'en

Min ngidaa Mufu'en, ngam Mufu'en doo nyaaman dawaadi. Min nyaamataa dawaadi. Min ndiiwataa 6e boo, 6e njooda yaasi kadi, 6e njooda yolnde. A yi'i, tummude to 6e ndokki nyaamdu haa ton boo, sey, loota 6aawo don, la66ina. Be pusataa kam. Be loota la66ina

tal. Feere maa ɓe don ngaanca bee tummude maɓɓe bana ɓooyma yaake mi ɓinngel kadi. Moy fuu warda bee tummude mum. To ɓe kefi nyaamdu, ɓe ndokka dum haa ton. Koo njaram, ɓe ndufana mo haa ton, o yara haa tummude maako, halarre maako.

Nii, ammaa jotta kam naa duniya feri? Be acci nyaamgo kuuje man. Be don ɓaɗa ɓiɓɓe Giziga'en. Giziga'en don ɓaɗa ɓiɓɓe maɓɓe. Nastindiri bee Giziga'en boodɗum kadi? Be don ngiiwa laaɓa, ɓorno limce laaɓɗe. Naane boo dum irin kakkan. Giziga'en sali jaɓgo ɓe. Ammaa jotta kam ɓe don laaɓa. Be nyaamataa kuuje nyiddude nyiddude boo. Koo to ɓe nyaaman boo naa ɓanndu kam holli ɓe laaɓi?

Booyma kam ɓe yamataa, ɓe cuusataa ɓadaago. Sakko ɓe yama ɓe ɓaɗa kam. Naa ɓe keɓataa kadi? Jotta kam hokkan. Be don ɓaɗa. Baɗle maaɗum warti koyɗum meere. Naa caɗɗum ba ɓooyma fahin.

Be donno haa dow hooseere. Be njippa ɓe ngara sey bana nyannde luumo. Maa boo ɓe njippa ɓe ngara luumo Marwa. Ammaa jotta kam ɓe njippake pat. Be ngari ɓe ɓadi Giziga'en goo fuu maa.

Wodɓe kam ɓe caali ngari Marwa doo. **Mufu non. Mbur Mufu. Mufu hay** kam ɗuudɓe kadi.

(20/2/1992)

26. Mofu'en haa Moogazaɗ

Aran kam Mufu'en ngalaano. Haa ɓe ngarata hooseere Moogazaɗ doo, duubi baaba am sappoo e jowi no, waatoo, hitaande 1939. Be yami maama maako'en: "Min ngidi njoodo dow hooseere doo."

Suy, maama am wi'i yoo: "Boodɗum, njoodee."

Ammaa ɓe yummi daayɗum ɓe ngari.

(23/1/1992)

Mufu'en bee Giziga'en kam nannduɓe, ammaa mi anndaa ko senndi ɓe.

Mufu'en kam gal lesdi Manndara nii ɓe yiwi ɓe ngari. Be yami maama amin haa ɓe keɓa joodaago dow hooseere Moogazaɗre goo. Be calaay, ɓe nduɗani ɓe kadi ɓe njoodi.

Suy, wadi asngol Mufu don wara, don wara haa ɓe ɗuudi jotta kam. Be don nyaama lesdi fuu kamɓe boo. Be don cankito non. Mufu'en ɓaɗataano Giziga'en. Jotta kam fuu don hawta kadi, don

ƙaƙa.

(4/3/1986)

27. Dendootiral bee Matakam'en

Bana min don nana jotta Matakam'en don mbi'a to Gizigaajo, ƙe tawri mo bee limce maako gulde, ƙe ƙortan. Be mbi'a naa hunde maɓɓe. Matakam'en kam **Matakam hay** wi'ete.

Yoo, to a tawi ƙe bee limce gulde nii, bana marde burde ngam daliila yiite nyaami de, ƙortaa kadi. Mbi'aa hunde maa. Nii ƙe don mbi'a. Ammaa doo kam jotta non nanan-mi, miin kam. Dagam ƙooyima kam fuu mi anndaa. A yi'i, Matakam'en boo ɓadaakino doo? Ammaa Matakam'en wofde don mbi'a ban nii. Mi anndaa teema to dagam dagam ƙooyima, ƙe donno nguusootira, mi anndaa. Koo ƙe mbolwan non, mi anndaa. Ammaa koo nder taariha yimbe amin mawbe, meedaay nango.

(10/1/1993)

Be don mbi'a ƙe ndendootiran bee Matakam'en. Ammaa miin kam mi anndaa. Teema bee wonbe Lulu kam dendootiran ngam Giziga'en wonbe haa too. Lulu naa don haa laawol Dagay too? Fommbina walaadu hiirnaange. Tinaa non kam noy ƙe keedootirta bee Matakam'en? Ndaa Mufu'en don caka maɓɓe.

(25/2/1993)

28. Soobaaku bee Muskun'en

Daga Fulbe ngaraayno, soobaaku donno bee Muskun'en. Teema, ƙe yummodi maa. Nde Fulbe ngari boo, a yi'i, naa walaa feecaare haa ƙe keɓa ƙe njaha ƙe coobootira. Ndaa Muskun'en ngoni gal fuunaange Marwa daaydum. Giziga'en boo don gal lesdi Marwa doo. Fulbe boo ngari nasti caka maɓɓe. A yi'i, naa walaa feecaare haa yimbe njaha ngillootira bee Muskun'en daayiiɓe haa to? Ammaa daga Fulbe ngaraayno doo, ƙe don mbi'a, ƙe don coobootiri. Min don mbi'a **Muzgum'en. Mujuk.**

(7/2/1992)

29. Saw'en

Saw'en donno dakka Maayo Logon ton nii. Gal ton ɓe ngonata kam. Nii ndotti'en mbi'ata. Ammaa mi anndaa haala man booddum.

Gooto don haa doo, gooto boo gal Bogo too. Ammaa ɓe nyaamdan. Jo"ina nyiiri caka cak nii, oo wadda junngo. Oo wadda junngo. Suy, ɓe nyaamdan.

Mbur Saw kadi.

Yoo, Giziga'en don mbi'a yoo: "Ngoya mir viŋ." Ngoya mir viŋ doo, goddo man maapinndiijo. To yehi ladde, wa'oygo hudo, ngam tiitugo suudu doo, to o yehi kosngal nii, o wara o tiita suudu haa lutta. Ngam hakke gennderaaku maako doo.

Yoo, to o ɓorti jawe junngo ɓe ɓornoto doo, suy, koocaa ɓornaa doo, hoore ɓanndu doo fuu jippa haa les. Hakke gennderaaku kadi. Mawni jamum. Jee njamndi. Booyma kam kuuje man kam warti bana kuuje al'aada sam. Yawo maapinndiiwo nii.

Yoo, jotta koo zamanu saa'i min ɓikkon doo, to on don ndema, malla on njehi dow kooseeje, on don tawa irin jawe maajum. Feere kam mannga. Sey, yamon: "Dum dume doo?" "Doo kam kuuje yimɓe mawɓe mawɓe ɓooyma, genndeeji acci."

Yoo, feere boo payande maɓɓe. Booyma ɓooyma fusata doo, ɓe keɓɓe. Irta haa lesdi doo. Don ban njamndi non. Nii, saati koloŋ koloŋ. Be mbi'i: "Doo kam yimɓe ɓooyma mawɓe mawɓe genndeeji naa bana amin jonta nii. Kamɓe."

Min nanan ban nii non tan.

Haa amin kam woodi bumdo nii, kanko kam o yahataa ladde. Tum min don kommbi maako kadi. Innede maako Mburwaka. Ammaa o maayi. Haa maako min nanata irin haalaaji man doo. Ndottiijo wuro ammaa o amaajo. To yimɓe ndilli ladde, kanko kam o joodo saare kadi.

Suy, o yeewtana min irin haalaaji man doo. O anndi dum. Kanko boo o nanan non fakat. Mo limtani mo boo nani non. Naa haala jee diga leele?

(25/2/1993)

30. Zumaya'en

Nde ɓe njoodi Marwa, woodi yimɓe feere kadiboo, **Biy Marva**

hoosi ɓe, yaari ɓe, njo"ini ɓe haa gal wuro Zanggi. Be don yewna ɓe Zumaya'en. Giziga'en kam, ammaa woodi ko sannji sedfa hakkunde maɓɓe. Ammaa ɓe mbolwan Gizigaare. Zumaya kam ba wi'go: "Aan boo nyaam."

Nde Fulɓe ngari nyaami lesdi Giziga doo fuu, kamɓe boo kadi, wofɓe maɓɓe kam cilmi, wofɓe boo mba"iti tokki gal wakeere fommbina doo nii, kamɓe ngarti gal Minndif njoodi. Giziga'en Minndif ɓe wofɓe maɓɓe kam fuu Zumaya'en. Ammaa ɓurna kam cilmi jotta kam.

(4/3/1986)

Yaake man kam Zumaya'en boo don haa fuunaange Marwa kadi. Be ngoodi laamu cembinngu. Amaa daga doɗdon ɓe yummi kadi. Bi Marva yaari ɓe ton, jo"ini ɓe ton. **Biy Marva** wi'i ɓe: "Njehee onon boo. Njoodoyee haa to. Nyaamee onon boo kadi." Kanjum wi'ete Zumaya. **Zumaya** kam ba wi'go nyaam aan boo. **Zum** kam nyaamgo. **Biy Marva** kam mawniraajo Zumaya no.

Lesdi Zumaya kam haa dukki lesdi gal fuunaange ton doo, daga gal Kaayewo'en, dume dume. Suy, nde duniya man wari jiiɓori ɓe kadi. Giziga'en boo cotti haa lesdi ndi. Be keɓaay semmbe jamum. Zumaya'en goo boo, majjiti nder Fulɓe kadi, cilmi. Wofɓe maɓɓe mbayyi wakeere gal lesdi Minndif nii. Nii kadi Zumaya'en man.

Wofɓe boo majji nder Fulɓe non. Ndaa asngol man don, ammaa Gizigaare kam walaa. Halki.

Zumaya laamorde, noy noy, kam inde ɓooymaaje kadi. Jiddere Zumaya, waatoo, **Kitikila biy Zumaya** kadi. Doo kam nde ɓe njehi ton, ɓe tawi woodi asngol yimɓe jawmu lesdi'en man don. Nde Zumaya'en njotti, kamɓe kam ɓe ngadi dabare. Naa *politique* kadi? To debbo wuuwi mbuuwri nii, yaarataa e goo kadi. Yolnde laamɗo ton nii, mballinta, moofɓa moofɓa moofɓa moofɓa moofɓa, haa. Debbo fotaay yaara mbuuwri haa e goo. Sey haa yolnde laamɗo. Be ndufa, ɓe njaara. Be ndufa, ɓe njaara. Be ndufa, ɓe njaara.

Yoo, jawmu lesdi'en goo boo, ɓe mbuuwri kam. Nde luural wadi hakkunde maɓɓe bee yimɓe lesdi man, ɓe njokkiri. Yimɓe lesdi man mbi'i: "Onon kam naa wariwari'en naa? On maraay lesdi ndi doo. On ngari. On tawu min haa doo." Zumaya'en mbi'i: "Kaay, onon ngari tawi haa doo?" Ngadi ngaaba. "Nden kam kollen maa kadi jidde kadi. To onon on aarti min wargo haa doo, naa on anndi jiddere mon kam naa mawnan? To minin boo jiddere amin ɓura nde moodon mawnugo, en ndaari nii suy." Yimɓe

Booyma'en boo bilki'en kadi. Be ndaari jiddere Zumaya'en kam wadtaako warti ba hooseere. Beya goo boo sam, kambe kam. Koo alaama maa walaa.

Suy, nii non, be njaɓtiri lesdi man kadi. Be mbi'i: "On ngi'i? Jotta kam naa minin mari lesdi?"

Zumaya'en kam genndeeji.

Jiddere nii warta ba hooseere, be njaha be pe" a lefde ton warti ba hooseere kam sey **kitikila Zumaya**.

Yimbe Zumaya kam **Zumaya hay**.

(25 /2/1993)

31. Kitikil Biy Magamak

Ko nanndi bee jiddere Zumaya doo, don haa Godola. **Kitikila Biy Magamak** ton. **Biy Magamak** kam ba wi'go laamiido paatuuru. **Kitikil** man boo mawni. Godola kam naa saaki? Ammaa winnde man don.

(25/2/1993)

32. Yiwde Nasaara

Nasaara kam jotta non wari? Nasaara kam nder ndiyam? Kanjum be don ndaari tal doo, ngam be don njoodi nder ndiyam. Nasaara kam cuudi maɓɓe, dume dume fuu nder ndiyam non. Yiwde maɓɓe kam. Nasaara kam be ndarni mo bee ginnawol non.

Sunaa be mboowi be bee bone non kam? Ginnawol non.

Asngol Nasaara kam pat daga ndiyam wurti. Ooho, maayo teeku. Ton laamdo maɓɓe woni. Nder ndiyam non, yahataa naange kam. Tum o don nder ndiyam non. **Buy tan**, waatoo, bana wi'go laamdo maɓɓe non. Woodaa innde. **Mbur babaraŋ**, dum Nasaara.

(27/1/1992)

33. Misi dugun

Misi dugun. Naa non? Dugun non. Be don mbi'a dugun boo. **Misi dugun hay** doo kam wanywanybe kadi, to a nani ban nii kam.

Macakar gal wakeere rewɓe kadi. Mo ɓaŋi debbo maa lattake macakarjo doo maa kadi.

(7/2/1992)

IV. SAARE GIZIGA'EN

34. Saare

Saare kam **hay** bee Gizigaare. Ko wi'ete saare kam maraa cuuci nder saare, maraa debbo. Haa amin kam gorko mara suudu, debbo mara suudu. Suudu kam **viŋ**. Binngel boo to mawni, wadi deydey duubi sappo, sappo e didi'en doo, ɓe ngadana mo suudu feere. To worɓe ɓe dido maa, ɓe don nder suudu maɓɓe. Suudu ɓikkoy rewɓe boo, feere.

Cuurel defeteendu boo naa don feere? Dum **hudul** wi'ete. Haala mannga woni nder **hudul**. Be don mbi'a: "Debbo nii joodtaa haa nder **hudul** kam noye?" Doo kam ba wi'go o joodataa nder saare maako kadi. Debbo kam haa patapata maako kam haa **hudul** maako nii o joodata. Ammaa naa o yaha haa baaba maako'en, janngo o don haa bappa'en, faɓɓi janngo haa kaawu'en. Woodaay. Booddum kam debbo kam tum don haa **hudul** maako. Debbo goongaajo kam.

Jugur kam zawleeru. Gorko kam hiiran ton.

Durgud, dum beembal. Beembal kam feere feere. Ammaa innde kam gootel. Be don mbi'a ɓinngel beembal, **zuŋ durgud**. Waatoo, beembal pamarel, haa suudu ɓe mahata. Nder suudu kanjum kam. Haa ton, ɓe loowata kuuje siga siga'en kam. Koo limce, koo dume. Warti ban akooti kadi. Haa ton boo bee **juɓur**. Be maha dum caka cak. Waatoo, reedu beembal kadi.

Danji kam **balak**, malla **palak**. Gufeeje doo, fe" a, wadda, tigga. Wadda piire maajum doo, yowa. Nden, feere yommbe ɓe caɓɓa. Feere boo cekke. Be ngara ɓe ngada. Be taara les maaki kadi. Ammaa ɓurdum kam gal dow ɓe mbadata. Sey to a don muuya wuro ngo feere nii, ɓiddo debbo, ngadaa surga, koocaa ngorgi maa'en, baakin nayo, njowo'en, ɓe njaha. On nyalla ton tiggango daada waaye maa doo, **balak** kadi. Doo kam on mo"ina booddum. To goddo laari o wi'an: "Doo kam dum waaye wayne wari wadani daada waaye maako." Innde man don feere. Naa fasali man don feere? Taara bee cekke, senna nder ton fahin, **muguni** man don.

Waatoo, 6e cennda nder ton. Goddo don joodi nder ton, a laarataa. Goddo don joodi gal too, a laarataa. Sekko don haa caka fahin. Nii doo, beldum meere.

Howgo saare kam bee gala. Be maha. Doo boo sey goddo goddo mardo semmbe. Mo walaa kam yommbe. Mo walaa yommbe kam sey don joodi non. Suudu don joodi feere mum doo. Mo walaa yommbe kam sey tampudo kadi. Naa yommbe kam goddo heban? Ammaa tampu6e ke6ataa yommbe.

Giramje kam **grawal**. Mar6e gaade tiggan gaade. Gaade kam **matay** wi'ete. **Matay** jee ke6al don, **matay** jee 6aŋgo rew6e don, **matay** jee he6go saa'a don. Naa feere feere kadi?

Lawru, feere naa suudu man don? Naa mo kala nastata ton. **Hay kuli** wi'ete. Malla **viŋ ngi kuli**. Ton 6e ndefata kuuje kam pat haa suudu man. Be ndefan mbal haa ton. Nii jee **kuli** man sey haa suudu man. Debbo jee defata kuuje man haa ton. Feere maako kanko nastata bee mo wadata lawru man 6e dido. Sey to kuuje man pat ndefi timmi, 6e ngurtina yaasi kadi. Yim6e nyaama. To 6e ngurtini yaasi boo, 6e njaha les beembal. Les beembal doo, to dum **kuli** baaba maa a wadata, njo"inaa feere feere tati. Ndaa beembal haa doo. Aan mo mari **kuli** man kadi, lawru man doo, njoofodaa haa do, les beembal man. Kusel, heŋre'en doo, naa pat peta peta peta 6e ndokka baaba kadi les beembal ton.

Yoo, nyiiri to 6e ndefi boo, ton 6e ngadata gefal. Baaba boo nyaama ton.

Yoo, bappa maa 6urdo 6adaago haa doo. Tokkiido boo haa doo. Nii, kam6e boo.

Haa les beembal caka saare 6e kirsan kuuje. Har amin kam beembal wonataa yaasi. Caka saare. Baaba am wadanno lawru haa ton kadi. Be ndufa ii'am tonton.

Nder defeteendu kam kuuje defgo nii. Kuroori'en, kaatinde don ton. Kaatinde kam **liwis**. Hayre namarde kam **ngurvuŋ**. Nyebbe'en, haako'en, mbuuja'en, kusel joorngel'en doo naa fuu haa ton. Mbuuja kam **menjereŋ**. Beldum meere. Ammaa Giziga'en kam anndaa wadgo. Sey Mufu'en haa gal kooseeje 6e ke6ata.

Hiirde kam haa yaasi, caka saare. Zawleeru kam duudataa? Naa yim6e duudataa? Naa heewan law? Hiirgo kam walaa e 6e kiirataa.

Dawaadi kam 6e njo"inan nder saare ngam aynugo saare, ngam findingo baaba saare jemma. To woodi ko dimmbi nii, rawaandu wohu, suy, a fina. Ngurtotodaa bee sawru maa bee la6i haa ndaaraa dume woni daliila rawaandu wohi. Feere, gujjo nasti. Malla boo

dabbaaji, hannde, paadaaji, pobbi, nasti haa nannga be'i.

(20/2/1992)

35. Gezləŋ

Gezləŋ kam dum suudu be'i, malla boo suudu baali. **Gezləŋ sla hay. Gezləŋ ngu wu hay**⁷. **Gezləŋ ngu tumuŋ hay**⁸.

Gezləŋ jey nagge kam sey haa Mufu'en. Dammugal walaa. Kambe ɓe don cooda gaggel nii, peetetel. Be nganta ngel nder suudu yi'ataa naange sam. Be daɓɓita hudo, ɓe ngadda, ɓe ndokka haa ɓe mbada **maray**. Dum **muguzlum** maɓɓe.

(4/3/1986)

36. Kocfo

To a ewi mo, a anndi fakat dum kofdo maada, dagam o don wara daaydum nii, a don jaɓɓo mo kadi. "Jaɓɓaama, jaɓɓaama. **Soo**⁹ **ndol ndol.**" **Ndol ndol** kam ba wi'go law law. "**Soo ndol ndol. Soo ndol ndol. Sawa, pura kaa hidik.**" **Pura kaa hidik** doo, "Laar ba saare maa. War aan kam. Nastu yotta haa doo nii. Laar ba saare maa non."¹⁰

Yowwaa, waatoo, o wari kadi haa yolnde. O saana kadi. "**I ra sawa.**" **I ra sawa** doo, "Mi don wara." "**Sawa. Soo ndol ndol.**"¹¹

Yowwaa, o nasta. Yottaago nii, suy, ɓe ngaddana mo ndiyam. O yara. Be mbe"itana mo daago. Be ngadda ndiyam kadi. To ndiyam kuroori don maa, ɓe ndufana mo nder ndiyam. Kuroori njareteendi. Be nama bee biriji nyaancaafi.

⁷ **Wu hay** kam be'i. **Aw** kam mbeewa.

⁸ **Tumuŋ** kam mbaala.

⁹ **Soo** fotan bee **sawa**.

¹⁰ **Puraj** kam laar. **Kaa** kam bana. **Hay** kam saare. **Hidik** kam saare maa. **Hidu** kam saare am.

¹¹ **Sawa** fotan bee **soo**.

Yowwaa, 6e don njo"ini *spécial* ngam yargo non kanjum kam. Be ndefataa dum bana nyiiri kadi. Kodo wari, bana baaba'en nii, yim6e maw6e doo, 6e ngadda taasaawo, malla, tummude. Be nokka kuroori man sedfa. Be ndufa nder ndiyam. Saftataa yargo. Don yara nii. Dam mbeldum hakke welgo. Don uura piŋ. Goddo kam, to domka nanngi mo jamum, naawi mo jamum doo, haa reedu maako dumaano, haa o tuuta ngam weli. **Hapa ngi si. Hapa** boo kuroori. **Ng** **si** boo jee yargo.

To o yari, o jooda kadi. O saanindira bee yim6e. To saanindira bee yim6e, to o yaran maa, baaba saare wurtina mo. To woodi mbal 6e ndefi haa fattude, 6e ndilla bee kodo maako. Be njaha 6e njaroya.

Yoo, 6e ngada dabare, 6e kirsa gertogal feere nii, 6e ndefana mo. Kam6e boo, 6e ndilli yaroygo kadi. Be ngarta. Be tawta nyiiri 6enndi.

Suy, 6e ndefana kodo goo, 6e ndokka mo 6e koocana mo o nyaama. **Daf.** Ba 6ooyma kam 6e ndokka mo 6inngel deydey pamarel nii, o nyaamda bee maako kadi. Naa hod6e wod6e cemtan? Be ngidaa nyaamgo meere meere?

Yowwaa, o nyaama bee 6inngel. Cemtan sam, Giziga'en kam. Feere kam maa semtan nyaamgo bee yim6e. Nyaamataa.

Yowwaa, 6e ndokka mo feere maako. Be ndokka mo bee 6inngel. Be nyaamda.

Yowwaa, to waalan maa, o waala kadi. Fajiri o wada dabare huucugo. O ja66ita yim6e, o ja66ita yim6e. To woodi ko 6e ndokkata mo maa, 6e ndokka mo.

Suy, baaba saare hoocana mo sawru maako, dofta mo. Hokkitittaa mo sawru tawon kadi, sey to o wurtini mo dow laawol daaydum, 6e cenndirta ton doo, o acca mo ton kadi.

Suy, o hokkita mo sawru maako. O wi'a: "Saanu saare. Saanu bikkon. Saanu yim6e maa pat kadi."

Suy, o huuca kadi. Oo boo warta.

(25/2/1992)

37. Gartuki saare nastunoodo danngay

Nastuco danngay to o wurti, o warti danngay maako timmi, naa o anndina yim6e? "Nyalaade kazaa, mi don huuca. Be taaska kadi." Wod6e ngara nja66o mo dow laawol.

Yowwaa, to o huuci, o yotti haa yolnde baaba maako, o nastataa saare tawon. Sey baaba wadda kuroori njigaari rufa nder ndiyam.

Yowwaa, baaba wara wolwa kadi. O wi'a: "Ndaa fiyam warti. Wartu saare, o joodo jam. Kala kalluci di o wartiri daga danngay doo fuu kadi taa nasta saare, taa dofta mo haa saare."

Yowwaa, suy, o wolwa, o wolwa, o wolwa, o wolwa, o wolwa.

Suy, o rufa ndiyam goo kadi paaw haa kosfe finngel doo.

Suy, fe nastina mo saare kadi. Nasta saare, yaha joodo haa daago, malla dow sekko. Be ngara fe caana mo kadi. Mo hefi sunku maako sappo, mo boorowol, walaa no walaa kadi. Be njomnana mo ceede fe ngadda. Doo kam koo rewfe maako, ndokkan mo. Booyma kam nii fe ngadfa. Doo kam o nasti saare jam kadi. Kala tuundi, dume kadi, ko o wartiri daga danngay doo, taa raafa yimfe. Taa nastida bee maako nder saare.

Suy, haala man timmi kadi. Ban nii o joodo nder saare maako jam.

(25/2/1992)

V. ASAMA, LESDI BEE LADDE

38. No asamaa'u daayori

Asamaa'u¹² boo daayaakino ban nii. Donno fadi yimfe ban danƙi maa nii non. Alla wolwanan fe, kamfe boo fe mbolwanan Alla. Nii nii.

Suy kadi, rewfe don una nii. To fe don una doo, fe faɗtataa gaafgal kam jamum haa towa. Sedfa sedfa nii, tum tum, taa meema asamasaa'u kadi.

Suy, fe faɗi debbo keso nii, wari haa wuro man nii, o wi'i kanko kam o tokkataako bana rewfe wodfe ngadata doo. Kanko kam o faɗataa. Sey o faɗta o sakkina haa dow. Be ngi'a o waawi wadgo, ungo.

Suy, o faɗti papal, o tappi nii, fiira, asamaa'i kam tiiri dilli dow, dali fe kadi.

Suy, fe lutti haa lesdi kadi. Daga nden asamaa'u daayake haa hannde. Naa jurumɗum?

(27/1/1992)

¹² Asamaa'u kam muɗ wi'ete.

39. No naange tokkorto

Be don mbi'a naange kam nii non nii gal fuunaange, nge wardata bana jotta nii nii. Ammaa nge yaha muta gal nii. To muti doo, woodi asngol yimbe feere nii, be don mbi'a be **Gurum'**en naa, beye beye naa. Kambe kam be ngalaa yiite. Be ndeeni naange muti, suy, nge yaha, nge dolla ndiyam. Nge don yaha nasta nder ndiyam. Nasti nder ndiyam nii, suy, ndiyam dolla.

Suy, be ngara kadi. Moy fuu nyada. Defrando haako defra. Defando nyiiri. Nii non be ndefrata haa maβbe kam.

Yoo, be aynataa kuuje maβbe ban doo. Payande boo, to be ndefi nii, to be nyaami, be cafti nii, be numataa janngo kam sam. Be softa, be njaha, be cakkina nder maayo kadiboo. Sey to be maati weelo kadiboo, be njaha, be daβbitoya. Nii non. Hakkiilo maβbe famdi sedfa. Nii be mbi'ata.

Yoo, naange goo, to nge mutoyi, suy, nge yaha nge latta njawdiri mbaaldiri.

Suy, ndi dogga, wurr kadiboo, huuca gal fuunaange. Janngo boo nge fuda kadiboo. To muti gal nii nii, nge latto njawdiri mbaaldiri kadiboo nii non.

(27/1/1992)

40. Yimbe les lesdi

Be mbi'i yimbe don gal les ton. Kadiboo, to be ngasi, be cumpita yaha tawa asngol yimbe feere don gal les ton nii. Asngol yimbe non nii, min anndaa yimbe toy.

Yowwaa, be mbi'a: "Bikkoy mbada hakkiilo. Taa ngadee nanaru sam. Onon kam mbadee hakkiilo. To on ngasan boo, hakkiilo hakkiilo nii. Sumpiti haa jokki lesdi doo, asngol yimbe feere don. Be don ngara nannga bikkon. Kambe doo." Be don ngadda nyiiri, ngada haa bice maβbe doo nii, taara nii, suy, be njaha be nasta too, be ngurtina bice goo nii nii, suy, to binngel yaha hoosa nyiiri nii, suy, fiira, be pooda, nastina dillira haa nder lesdi. Ngam haa bikkon mbada hakkiilo. Taa be ngiilo be ndaayno wuro. Taa be ngada koo dume bilaa dunjayeere ndotti'en kadi.

(27/1/1992)

41. Huunyaare nder lesdi

Huunyaare man doo mawnde. Dow man kadi lesdi joodi.

Huunyaare don nder ndiyam.

Yoo, to turti, to yidi wadgo halleende, nii, suy, nasta yaha suuwa haa luggudum man nii, cip.

Suy, yimbe man natta kadi. Kuuje pat halka. Ammaa nde wadtaa nganyaandi man, don jogi non duniyaaru.

Doo kam haala yimbe meere non. Pewe non. Be don mbi'a. Ammaa duniyaaru kam naa Alla tagi? Har amin jotta minin yimbe defte kam Alla tagi. Naa nii? Naa kuuje don haa les lesdi, ammaa defte kam yeccaay?

(27/1/1992)

42. Mojaaki lewru

To be ngi'i lewru moji¹³, wooji coy, be nyada ndiyam. Koo moy fuu nyada ndiyam nii haa tummude mawnde. Be ngadda deydeyaare kadiboo, be kinka. Be pindina fikkon. Be mbi'a fikkon: "Tappee. Ngookee. Tappee nii taa daanee sam." Koo binnigel don daano boo, be piya dum nii, be pindina dum. O fiya. Be don tappa nii, gunguruŋ gunguruŋ, gunguruŋ gunguruŋ, gunguruŋ gunguruŋ. To fudfi laaŋgo sedda nii, "Yowwaa, on don tappa doo, a yi'i, don laaŋa? Besdee. Tappee bee semmbe." Fadda nii, haa be ngooka. To laaŋi, "A yi'i jotta kam naa nafi kadi? Alla nani tornde kadi. Jotta kam koo moye fuu yaha daano kadi. Jotta kam on ciwtoto." Nii be ngadta foroy, kambe kam. Tum, to lewru mojake nii, suy, nii non be ngada.

Miin maa be pindini yam duucfdum. Haa mawnu-mi mi wafi debbo doo fuu, mi don wafa. Mi don wafa tum. Ammaa miin kam mi fiyataa kam. Sonaa yaake mi binnigel, doo kam, mi don fiya.

(6/1/1992)

¹³ **Kiya a mbidi le kam ba wi'go lewru mojake.** Waatoo, ndu waylitake kadi.

43. Mojaaki naange

Mojaaki naange¹⁴ kam, to 6e tawi ladde maa, 6e ndogga 6e ngarta saare tan. Be ngarta, 6e kirsa, 6e ngada sadaka. Feere kam wi'a: "Duniyaaru timmi kadi. Nyaama non. Mi reena mi maaya." Nii non, 6e don ndeeni nii, 6e don ndeeni nii, 6e don ndeeni nii. To gadando sadaka, wada. Mo wadataa sadaka boo, nyaama mum, don reeni. Nii non tan, haa 6e ndeena ko Alla wadda. To Alla wartiri naange maa, usoko. Wartiraay boo, 6e don nuddini, 6e maayan non, jotta kam. Duniya timmi.

(6/1/1992)

44. Pobbi

Pobbi don. To fa66i, fa66i, fa66i don, fadfa bamde, mbara. Suy, daga waataay non, dum yakka hoot hoot hoot, haa wamnde do"o. Naane kam fotaay wurtaago jemma. Ammaa naa nanngataa goddo kam sey to a toonyi. Fowru kam sey semmbe senndirta maa bee huunde man kadi. Sey to semmbe 6uri ndu. Sonaa non kam accataa. Hebi kam accataa sey daana nii. Ammaa paadaawu accan. Fadfi yari yiyam maa acca, nannga feere kadiboo yara yiyam, nannga feere kadiboo yara yiyam.

(20/2/1992)

45. Paadaaji

Paadaaji don jur. Bee gite am boo mi laari jur. Timmini be'i am, nyalde gootel, fadfa be'i baakin sappo. Don jur ba dawaadi. Ammaa jotta kam sey jemma jemma haa caka kooseeje daaydum. Ngam 6ooyma doo, a yi'i, yim6e duudaa, Mufu'en badaaki. Kooseeje corok don heewi bee kuuje man. To naange fudfdi mutgo nii, ngurto, li6 li6 li6 li6 bana be'i non fadfa be'i. Paadaawu jee nanngata goddo kam dum yim6e nii lattoto paadaaji. Yaha 6ikkon nannga, sukaa6e fadfa. Doo kam mistiri'en. Asngol kuuje man don kadi. Wadoo6e kuuje man don. Tonaa non kam dum toonyataa

¹⁴ Pas a mbidi le kam ba wi'go naange mojake.

yimbe. Paacfaawu furi darnde rawaandu, juuti. Doggan law. Bana paatuuru nii. To dum wara boo, a nanataa, a maatataa sam. To nanngi mbeewa maa, mbeewa woya wa'aw. Cuy, do"o. Kanjum kam yara ii'am nii. To harki boo acca.

(20/2/1992)

46. Nyiibi

Nyiibi kam njottaaki Moogazan. Ammaa di don ngara lesdi Marwa doo kam. Sey hitaande feere nii doo, di ngari haa di nasti gal wakeere lesdi Meri doo, tokkiri Tokommberere nii. Di carri yimbe jur. Goddo feere anndaa haa farta, wara yaaba. Goddo feere to be don parta nga nii, o wi'i yoo kanko boo haa o fadda bee armawal maako.

Suy, nyiwa wara nannga mo, yaaba mo, teteki wurto coot. Hikka doo boo di ngari jur haa lesdi doo. Wadi nyiibi baakin teemedde nay e gootel haa lesdi Muturuwa, Kaa'ele doo haa faffi wonni kare pat. Di kam naa di Waaja. Di kodi. Di *centrafrican*. Di kaadi gal Minndif too nii. Di mbari yimbe, nyaami gawriije, wadi mbononda kam. To wari tawi gawri waagaare nii, nyaama pat. Biriji boo, doofa waaga waaga, suy. Koo ko wadata walaa. Ngesa boo to nasti ton nii, nyaamda pat. Bononda tan. Fotaay fartugo. A don laara dum wannane. Walaa ko a waawi wadgo. Genndeeji njafti lesdi.

(22/2/1993)

47. Ledde

Ngam Giziga'en kam don ndokka innde wuro, **Valawad**. **Valawad** kam cfaaleehi. Ganye kam **gaye** non. Ganye duuraay wari doo. **Akuku**, dum bokki. **Duway** kam kojoli. **Teten** kam anndakeehi. **Dogo** boo tanni. **Mbulam** kam jaaffe. **Dogor** boo tanni.

(4/3/1986)

VI. NYAAMDU BEE NJARAM

48. Gawri

Gawri¹⁵ kam **galaŋ** tawon. Naa mi aartirtaa **mosoko**? Mi aartira gal **galaŋ**, **gagazaŋ**, **bulbaasi**. Bulbaasiri. Cammeeje kam cankiti cankiti. Noonde kam tal bana dereewol. Nyiiri kam balwan, gite ngidaa yi'go.

Andariya, anndariya. Gawri man daneejum, beldum to a yakka keccum.

Urzaɓalaja don. **Mejejel** don. Doo kam gawri duumol.

Zlarawoy. **Mugujuɓoy**. Fuu asngol gootel kadi. **Zlarawoy** wi'ete cerge.

Jotta kam muskwaari kadi. Safra kam **safra** non. Majeeri, nii non. **Burgu** kam burguuri.

Mulgoy boo masarji. **Kudaaku** kam kudaku.

(7/2/1992)

49. Nyaameteeko

Nyaameteeko¹⁶ kam jur. **Arasl** doo follere. **Azɓak**, dum haako nyebbe. **Ambaka** don. Dum dubaaho. **Matkavay**, tasɓaaho, tapsaaho. **Azlola** kam baskooje. **Zaazewed** kam gabayji. **Akufok** kam gubudo. Bokko kam **akuku**¹⁷.

Yowwaa, **membrek** don, doo kam laalo. **Maŋgaraw** don. Doo boo laalo. Asngol laalo maŋgaramho. Dum **selekiya** don. Selekiya. Gal amin yiwi manaa? Kanjum Giziga'en nyaamata kadi. **Memeyel**, dum memeyelho.

Zluɓur don. Dum wanko. Woodi wuro feere boo **Zluɓur** wi'ete don gal Minndif. Wonan dum ledde man don ton kadi. **Mikikirek** kam jooye. Nyaaman.

Taami boo tinyeere. **Ander** kam biriji. **Ander Mufu** boo galaaaji.

¹⁵ Gawri kam **daw**.

¹⁶ **Alar ngu zum** kam nyaameteeko. Haako defaako kam **alar**. Ammaa haako ko defaaka kam **kalaf** wi'ete.

¹⁷ Bee Hawsaare boo **kuuka**.

Awaŋ kam cukkuri.

(7/2/1992)

50. Mbal

Mbal¹⁸ kam har amin kam ɓuraay asli didi, tati man doo. Be don ewna **dalay nga daf**, doo, dum don caka cak non. Lattaaki kunndurku, lattaaki mbal. Lattaaki mbal, don caka cak, kanjum kam bana kunu.

Kunndurku bee furdu kam feere feere kadi. Furdu doo **mbazla**. **Mbazla babaraŋ**. Kunndurku kam jemmaare woore nii, suy, ɓe njara janngo? Ammaa mbal naa sey to wadi balde tati? Peetum man kadi? Defgo furdu bee bilbil kam feere feere.

(1/2/1993)

51. Defgo mbal

Koo jotta ɓe accaay defgo **muzum**. Koo moy fuu defanan hoore mum, rewɓe kam. Be ndefa, ɓe njara. Be ndefan ngam filu. To surga wadi ɓe ngafa.

(23/1/1992)

Defgo kam ɓe don ndefa. Nyannde meere doo boo, ɓe don ndefa. Naa sey nyannde luumo. Rewɓe ndefata kadi. Worɓe kam naa ndefataa mbal? Ammaa woodi Mufuujo feere. Kanko kam o wadan tour bee debbo maako. To o defi, debbo boo munya. To o sippi dam maako, nden, debbo boo defa kadi. A yi'i haa duniya doo, *exception* ɓe mbi'ata bee Nasaaraare doo naa don?

(25/2/1992)

52. Bilbil

Be mbaɗa puɗnaandi. Baawo don, ɓe arɓa dum. Be mba"ina ndiyam. Ndiyam don waywa nii, ɓe ndufa kuroori goo haa ton. Suy, don dollo, don dollo, don dollo.

¹⁸ Mbal kam **muzum** wi'ete.

Yowwaa, to dolli, ban nii, jango, 6e ciiwa kadi. To 6e ciiwi, jango fajiri, 6e mba"ina kadiboo. Don dolo nii haa haa haa haa yuufa. Be kooa salite man. Waatoo, dirdir man doo. Be ngaawa nii, haa laaba tal. Ngam to 6e acci bee man doo, woodataa.

Suy, to 6e ngadi ban nii doo, 6e ndolli boodfum, 6e ndolliti doo, suy kadi, 6e kooa cake man walla boo, ngaandi man luttata tis tis doo, les doo, bee man 6e 6eendinta kadi. Be kooa seeda nii, 6e ndiira dum haa naange nii, 6e ngada haa ton.

Suy kadi, 6eendina kadi.

Suy, 6e njilla bee sefre daaleehi haa wod6e feere. **Valawad.** Haadan boo naa boodfum? Naa njamu?

(1/2/1993)

53. Furdu

No 6e ndefirta furdu kam ban nii. Be ngadda gawri. Be cor6a 6e njaarta. Laabi naa? Be coofna nder ndiyam.

Suy, 6e ngadda bammbambe, 6e cudda dow gawri goo. To 6e cuddi doo, waala jemma didi.

Suy, ndi fuda pat. To fudi doo, 6e ngayla kadi haa dow daago. To 6e ngayli haa daago doo, 6e ndiira haa naange. To dum yoori, suy, 6e nama kadi. Be diggintaa kanjum kam bana kuroori nyiiri. Be ar6a. Ar6ugo dum hoynugo jango. To 6e ar6i boodfum nii, suy, 6e ngadda ndi rufa nder fayande. To 6e ndufi nder ndiyam, waala, kuroori man doo lamma bana leemu goo, top nii.

Suy, 6e ngara 6e ndefa kadi. Be ndefa bana nyiiri goo. Be ndefa, 6e ndefa, 6e ndefa, 6e karna bana gaari goo. Don caka **daf** bee gaari.

Yowwaa, suy, 6e ndotta nii, a laari bana nyiiri goo, ammaa to a ngociti nyiiri, a yaari hunduko nii, lammudum. Nyiiri lammundi goo. Suy, 6e ndotta 6e ndiira haa daage walla cekke.

Suy kadi, 6e acca haa feewta delem. Feewti wulaay fahin doo, 6e ngadda kadi giramje mawde mawde doo. Be njo"ina, ngada nyiiri mbal goo nder giramje goo. Be kamya, 6e kamya, 6e laawa bee ndiyam. Be don kamya 6e ngadda pudnaandi deydey sedda 6e nami. Be cammina. To cammini nii, kamya kadi. Kamya bee man, kamya bee man. Laati bana masalan nyiiri *pain* 6e tamsata doo.

Yowwaa, haa to maati booddum, suy, kadi, 6e ma66a nder giramje baakin didi, tati, nay. Doo kam haa semmbe debbo fuu kadi. Mo yidi defgo jur maa, naa duddina payande? Mo defan sedda non, tampa-semmbeejo boo, a yi'i naa duddintaa payande? Deydey semmbe maako.

Yowwaa, suy, 6e ma66a booddum. To 6e ma66i, henndu nastataa.

Suy kadi, dum yuufa kadi. Bennda kadi. Bil bil bil bil. Waatoo, bana gaz goo don yuufa nii, yuufa nii, haa warta harka, bana a yummini moto nii, badbadbad. Kadiboo, de" a. Kadiboo, fahin, badbadbad. Doo kam kuldo kam fuu doggan. Mo meedfaay anndugo haala man kam nastataa suudu man. O wi'an: "Woodi ko woni haa don." Sey to 6e mbi'i mo: "Naa mbal benndata?" Sey, o de" a. Tinaa non kam, o wi'a: "Woodi hunnde bee yonki woni nder suudu man." Mbal don harka badbadbadbad.

Yowwaa, suy kadi, haa to benndi. Wada nyalde didi.

Yowwaa, jango man, to waali benndugo hannde, jango ban fajiri kadi, benndi. To don fata bana mbi'-maa-mi doo, doo kam debbo ilinan. Anndi maati kadi. Naa benndan fakat? Ammaa don de"i non, anndi woodaay. Benndataa. Naa taa dum de" a non doo. Sey harka.

Suy, jango 6e caka kadi. Be caka, 6e caka, 6e caka, haa giramje. Be don ndufa haa ton kadi haa giramje keewa. To keewi, a yi'i, yaroofe ngara kadi. Be ngara, 6e njara.

Waatoo, gabagaaji doo, 6ooyma doo, 6e nyoota kadi bana booro nii nii, 6e don ewna **mutus** bee Gizigaare.

Suy, bee man 6e cakirta kadi. Siiwa siiwa haa payande mawde mawde mawde nii.

Suy, 6e coora kadi. Mar6e haaje njara kadi. To timmi kadiboo, 6e cakta cake man goo, luttudum doo. Doo kam welaa. Doo kam welataa bana premier kadi. *Deuxième* man naa don? *Premier* man **mbazla** mal kadi.

Deuxième man boo **a ra zda ka asef naj vra. Asef¹⁹ nga mbazla**. Waatoo, 6e cakti kadiboo, cake man jee naane goo, doo kam 6e biddita. Haa ton 6e anndata timmi kadi.

Be ndufana be'i cake. Be'i nyaama dum. Mardo be'i, mardo gaduuji. Puccu, fuu nyaama hunnde man, hurgan maa nyawu dabbaaji doo.

(1/2/1993)

¹⁹ **Asef**, dum cake mbal.

54. Dalay

Dalay doo, doo kam nyalde non 6e ngadta. Be karna gaari nii, walla boo, nyiiri luttundi.

Suy, 6e ngadda nii pudnaandi, 6e ngada haa ton. To 6e ngadi nii, janngo, ban hannde asiri, 6e ngadata. Janngo fajiri 6e njarata. Nii non. Kanjum kam dakam. Ammaa don caka kundurku bee mbal kadi. Semmbe walaa. Wuykintaa.

Muzum paalel. Paalel kam faandu peetel.

(1/2/1993)

55. Luumo Moogazaŋ

Luumo manngo donno. Luumo waati. Be don kirsa kaaki sappo, sappoo e go'o no. Alamisaawo Moogazaŋ, 6ooyma. Ngo waati. Waati 6uraay duubi sappo. Waati sam. Jotta doo, nyannde luumo man nii, a tawataa koo gooto.

Gayak woodi lumel peetetel naane maa. Manngo kam Moogazaŋ. Gayak boo alatwo. Luumo kam warti Marwa don kadi jotta kadi.

(25/2/1992)

56. No tagu nanngirta doombi

Doombi²⁰ kam min don nannga duudfum masin kadi. Asli doombi kam mi anndaa jur, ammaa mi limtante baakin d'idi, tati kam.

Ndaa woodi doombi min 6uri yidgo masin doo, 6uri nafgo boo, nyaama bilaa seko, min don mbi'a mocojji. Kanji kam haa yaasi, haa nder ladde, haa nder kowaadi. Di njoodataa nder wuro haa saare di nyaama kuuje nyiddudi nyiddudi doo kam woodaa. Kanji kam kowaadi nder ladde ngonata. Mocojji kam 6uri doombi saare doo sedfa nii. Feere boo don mawna. Mannga. Beldi masin. Bellere corok kanjum kam. Buri kusel fuu welgo, to debbo waawi defgo dum kam. Kanji min 6uri nanngugo kadi.

²⁰ **Kotokom** kam innde asli doombi fuu.

Godfi boo haa saare. Ban gondi nder suudu maa jonta, daamata tum tum doo, kanjum kam min ewno gozlomo. Kanjum kam nder saare ton bononda. Dume maa nyaaman. Goddo to waali jemma maa, wara nyaama kosde doo nyaama nyaama nii. Debbo jo"ini kuuje nyiddudum maa, wara nyaama. Liingu. Walaa ko walaa kadi. Kanjum kam latti bana gaduuru doombi kadi. Welaa sam, kanjum kam. Wodde kam nyaamataa dum. Sinaa bikkon bikkon doo. Kanji kam nder saare di njoodoto. Nder suudu, wasa suudu nii haa haa haa.

Doombru woyla boo don. Be don mbi'a **munduwan**. Wujjan biriji. Yakka biriji tidda haa galaal. Tidda tidda tidda nii. Haa keftaa dum kam a don tokka laawol man nii, don yaha rufgo biriji di ngujjata doo. Njahaa rufa sedda sedda sedda sedda, a don tokki laawol nii, haa njahaa njokkaa ngaska maaji kadi. To a wasa, wasa, a nannga. Baakin sappo feere kam. A nannga haa wicco, fooda, tappa. Natan. Naa sey bee dabare?

Kanjum boo booddum kam dabbunde. Ammaa duumol kam woodaay. Gilde corok. Yimbe ngidaa nyaamgo kanji kam. Naa dum nyaamgo jee yimbe tefata kadi.

Mocoggi kam min njaha haa ladde bee bikkon doo. Doombi kowaadi. Coycoy kanji kam. Min kooa yommbal keccal. Yommbal keccal doo, siifta siifta siifta nii, wama akoryel. Walla bee Gizigaare boo, **akor**. Wama wama wama nii, yaja gal fuddam doo, gal timmitirde boo don sewa, don yaha sewgo nii. Goddo feere wama baakin jowi. Goddo feere baakin didi. Goddo feere gootel. Doo kam deydey sembe goddo kadi. Njahaa haa kowaadi haa ladde. Haa ton doo, laabi maaji don. Koo moy fuu yaara sorna, sora haa les kowaagol doo, maɓɓa booddum, acca laawol man kam maɓɓataa. Acca. Sora sora ban min njaha daaydum bee cabbi, fadɗa kowaagol doo nii, fadɗa fadɗa fadɗa. Doombi boo don ndogga ngara ngara ngara nasta nder akorji doo. Naa laabi man don suudataako? Les kowaagol naa laabi man don mbaali non.

To nasti nii, suy, wara fooda nannga wartira saare. Goddo feere nii booro maako haa heewa. Naa booddum meere? Kusel man weli kam. Kusel mocoggi do suran kusel mbeewa, kusel nagge, welgo. Non non haa am kam. Saa'i mi derkeejo no, mi nanngi jamum, wartira defa. Don dolla non. Debbo baawdo defgo man kam naa kusel man saftataa nyaamgo?

Akor doo to nanngi wadi yiyam doo, a loota boodfum. Ngam taa yiyam man lotta haa ton. Taa doombi kefta dum. **Akor** nanngan koo tati, nay maa. Wara tidfa ton. Laawol wurtaago gal too naa walaa? Loraago baawo boo walaa. Ndaa di keftataa njatgo maa. Koydum meere. Amaa sey waawa kuugal man.

Mocojji kam **mocod** bee Gizigaare. Wooru kam mocorru.

Woodi **gajagad** wi'ete don. Dum doombu ladde. Sera sera daneejum. Kanjum boo nyaameteedum.

(23/1/1992)

57. No tagu nanngirta lidfi

Lidfi²¹ boo naa min don nannga? Haa amin doo, 6ooyma doo naa, ndiyam don duuddam. Haa ton doo lidfi don jur. Moogazaŋ doo lidfi duuddi Wadtaako sam. Be ngadda luumo.

Jotta kam ndiyam walaa bana 6ooyma. Haa mi fudfa yi'go ndiyam don usto kam, saa'i man doo, deydey 1958'en doo. Nasaara'en njehi haa dow hooseere her ndiyam wurtoto, dilla wara tokka maayo wara les doo. Be tanki dum bee *ciment* nii. Be ngadda kaaye, 6e ngadda *gravier*, 6e ngadda *dume dume*, 6e loowa.

Suy, 6e ngari 6e tanki dum. Be ngari 6e disi tiyo. Be ka66a, 6e ka66a, 6e ka66a. Haa 6e kippini ndiyam man haa 6e poodi tiyo man haa dum warti les kadi. Daga nden goo, ndiyam fudfi ustugo. Min kam ngi'-mi. Nasaara'en njahan daga Marwa doo.

Suy, min donno nannga lidfi bee jubaaŋi amin. Moy fuu e jubaawol mum. Goddo feere bee kunaayel maako. Goddo feere bee junngo non. Goddo feere bee jaaral, laara liingu nder ndiyam nii, cos, yuwa haa hoore, nannga.

Duumol, dabbunde, ceefu fuu. Ndeye fuu 6ooyma kam. Seedanno. Ban lewru mars doo, min puddata nanngugo lidfi nder beeli kam, nder julwiije. Ndiyamji don duudi ton masin. Lidfi boo jur. Nannga nii, defa.

Goddo feere waawataa defgo dum. A yi'i 6e mbaawataa aynugo dum boo. Don keccum tum boo waawataa. Seeka kadi wada dow yiite, yoorna, wada haa buhuure.

²¹ Liingu kam **kilif** wi'ete.

Min anndaa lidfi jur. Ndaa min ngoodi muuɓalaaɗi. **Moɓolo** bee Gizigaare. Min ngoodi malalayɗi. **Malalay** bee Gizigaare. Murayje. **Muraŋ** bee Gizigaare. Menngedejeje. Menngedeere kam woore. **Manjadey** bee Gizigaare. Doo kam ɓuri famɗugo.

Yoo, pelpeleeji, dum **slelemke**. **Momburkotok**, dum farawre.

Yowwaa, **awed** doon. To a taki **awed**, haako haadan rok. **Awed** mawnataa jur. Wicco woojataa ba murayje. **Kilif mbur**, murayɗi ceekaadi. **Kilif mbur** kam ba wi'go liingu godɗo. To dum seekaaka kam, **moɓolo**. Ankaltaawu kam walaa. **Angrekeŋreke** kam don. **Angrekeŋreke** woodi gi'e haa wicco, haa hoore. Gi'e kam naawɗum. Dum kam asngol fowru lidfi. Jee peetel man. Halli. Tufan godɗo. Sey bee hakkiilo kanjum kam. Meemgo dum sey bee hakkiilo.

Yoo, woodi liingu feere, ɓe mbi'ata dum bee Fulfulde, mboynaawu. Weli masin ba gertogal doo. Kanjum kam naa nder ndiyam.

Koo ɓe nela kuude feere boo, min ngidfaa kadi, sey min cuklana haala lidfi. Sey to bone wadi. Sey ɓe tappa, fadda. Tinaa non kam min accataa sam. Yahgo janngirde maa, a yidaa. Yahgo duroygo maa, a yidaa. Yahgo remoya maa, a yidaa. Hakke welgo, yidgo lidfi bee fijirde.

(23/1/1992)

58. Ndiyam duuddam donno haa Moogazaŋ

Ndiyam duuddam wonno haa Moogazaŋ²². Ban lewru *mars* doo nii, lidfi ɓe puɗɗata waawaago lidfi. Lidfi wadtaako. Jotta kam walaa sam. Muuɓalaaɗi tan walaa godɗi kam. Ban lewru *mars* ɓe puɗɗa nanngugo haa ndiyam wara tawa. Don nannga non. Timmataa boo.

Pat ndiyam timmi, hersi koo.

Ndiyam man haa dow hooseere. Tanki bee *ciment*. Jokki *tuyau*. Foodi ndiyam wartiri haa les. Nii non nii fuɗɗam timmugo ndiyam kam. Haa waddi hannde kam. Ndiyam walaa sam. *Tuyau* boo walaa. Ndiyam haa maayo boo walaa. Duniya yoori non kanngaraŋ kaŋ. Haa waddi *indépendance*. Jeeri.

²² Moogazaŋ yiwi **mwa gagazaŋ**. Waatoo, dum hooseere wodeere. Teema ngam noonde huɗo dow hooseere.

Bulli haa 6e ngasa lugga. Booyma kam 6e ngasataano 6ulli. Bee waawru non. Be ngaafra njaareendi sedfa nii, suy, ndiyam wannga. Jotta kam 6e ngasa, 6e ngasa haa 6e luggina. Ndaa luggingo boo kaaye.

(4/3/1986)

59. Asngol paa6i

Asngol paa6i kam naa 6e nanngataa jur sunaa agesru. Min 6ikkoy kam nannga, wula, yakka haa ladde nii. Agesru non bee Fulfulde. Baleejum nii ba paa6a non nii, ammaa, kanjum kam deydey. Feere boo mawnan. Ammaa 6otowdum nii ba liingu muu6alaawu ba anndudaa doo nii. Nii 6anndu kam wa'i. Naa bana paa6a 6anndu don nyaadi nonnon bana gargada doo. Naa non. **Ages** doo maa 6e don nannga jamum kadi. Sooda bee ceede duudde yaara wuro.

Bee merlekji. **Merlek** bee Gizigaare. Nanngan. Welii. Nasaara maa don yaha har amin ton nannga sooda hokka ceede. Be nanngana mo nii, yaara wuro ma66e. Nela haa lesdi ma66e, nyaama. Nii 6e mbi'ata.

Akraŋ kam paa6a mannga. Dum gidigidiiru. Nyaameteedum.

(23/1/1992)

60. No tagu nanngirta colli

Colli²³ kam, dabare man 6uri semmbe maa. Aan kam to mi wi'i maa: "Nanngu colli," a waawataa? Miin kam mi waawan.

Colli doo, min njaha haa ladde, min tefa taari. Min da66ita taari nii, ngadda. Haa licce lekkon bana doo, ngada taari haa ton. Wada wada wada yaara haa babal colli ngarata njara ndiyam. Colli jur moo6tata ton. Wara wallina wallina wallina kommbi ndiyam. Colli ngara njippo kadi biji biji biji biji, ngara haa di njara ndiyam goo, suy, taari hooa di. Feere kam lisal gootal a he6an baakin colli sappo. Feere jowi. Feere jeego. Feere boo gootel. Bofta kadi, 6ora nastina nder booro. Kadiboo a yaha. A wada fahin. To colli piiri, ndilli, a wada fahin. To colli piiri, a wadi fahin, kadiboo, on njaha on cuudfa. Colli ngara fahin, accaa.

²³ Sonndu kam **diyew** wi'ete.

Ledde kam fuu don mara taari. Don wada pinndi man doo, pinndi bee sikkoy man doo, kanjum min yakkata kadi. Yakka yakka, suy, wadda kudol. Wurwa nii nii, haa hunnduko, suy, taari wurta. To wurtini, a wada nii, wallina. Juutdum juutdum kadi kommbi ndiyam.

Godfo feere kam waawataa nanngugo seyto 6e ndokki mo. Anndaa wallingo sam.

Colli kam min nanngata jur doo, **ajer**. Curkumje bee Fulfulde naa? Colli man don ngara jur bana naargewol goo hur hur hur hur. Haraka kam wadtaako. Danguraaaji. **Dangura** bee Gizigaare. Kanjum burata nanngugo. Weli sam. I'e don caati. Nyaanca bee codduri maata boodfum, mannda kadi dow don. Weli kanjum kam.

Haa saare amin maa kusel kam jur. Ammaa miin kam mi yidi sey kuuje ban nii. Kusel jee na'i, be'i, jee baaba hirsanno doo, welantaako yam bana kuuje doo. Kanjum buri yidgo.

To 6e don ngada diiwgal boo, mi suuda mi dilla ladde. Mi hooa rawaandu am tokka yimbe, yaha ladde nyalla. Tokki riiwgo kuuje haa ladde. Nyannde feere, mi heba jaawle didi. Feere boo tati. Donno jur. Haa nder saare maa jaawle donno ngara.

Godfo feere don heba geeraade jaawle, softa nder booro wartira. Booro kam dum **gabal** wi'ete bee Gizigaare. Haa amin kam, min ngadan dum bee lalal. Gabalji feere feere.

To hebaay jaawngal²⁴ muumal boo, heba geeraade. Jaawle boo waanee gertoode de ngi'ataa doo. Tokkere jaawle baakin teemerre. Be piirna de kiriririri, piirna nii. Dawaadi don. Yimbe don cankiti haa ladde non. To de piiri nii, de njaha, de koda dow yimbe non. Nangga non. Ammaa hiddeko nannga, bone don. Ndogga haa comaa. Feere, parta haa coomna ngal, aan boo a somi, godfo feere yaha nannga. Aan a somi meere. Kanjum kam naawfum.

Agonok kam poola. **Tuhuru** boo gerlal.

(23/1/1992)

61. Diiwgal

Feere boo, dawaadi am padfa baakin lelwa ngoota. Mi roonda mi wartira. Ammaa yimbe don njafta kadi. To semmbe maa famdi nii, binngel kadi, 6e njaftan. Koo rawaandu maa nanngi nii, 6e njaftan.

²⁴ Jaawngal kam **cuvonj** wi'ete.

Feere kam koo hoore maa heɓataa. Baaba kam mi yidaa mi yaha. Ammaa daada am kam yidi kusel ladde doo. Buranan mo kusel be'i bee baali.

Diiwgal kam min yumma Moogazaŋ doo, njippa Gayak doo, nasta ladde Kodek doo, gal Yaga'en doo. Dilla gal ton. Feere maa yaha haa gal Malam Peetel'en. Feere boo eera maayo Bagalaf doo, dilla gal Julgufje doo nii, ladde doo fuu.

Kuuje kam ɓooyma kam jur. Yahataa daayɗum maa. Buutu no. Hannde nde kam wi'ete kuuje man timmi.

Ko njahan-mi ladde, mi meedaay laargo mbarooga.

Mbojon kam jur lee kadi. Ji'e don. Beldum meere. Dawaadi parta mbojon. Be don parta dagam daayɗum, don dogga wara wara. Dawaadi don parta. Feere, a wara fadɗa bee sawru. Feere boo, dawaadi nannga yeeso maa, koocaa.

Jurumdum boo naa nyaamdu kadi? Yurmeende maa duudataa? Nyaama non.

Nyiiwa walaano. Nyiibi don boo, min njahataa gal di ngoni kam. Gal wadata haɓre kam naa tefataa kadi?

(23/1/1992)

62. Fijirde lagaawal

Min don tira lagaaje. Miin maa mi don tira haa ladde. Heɓa jaɓɓe, una jilla bee gombal duma doo nii, yommbe doo, tappa tappa tappa, wartira dum bana dumaani goo, suy, disa haa kudol ban nii.

Suy, min don ngada *guerre*²⁵ man caka amin minin sikkoy kam. Oo fida oo. Oo fida oo. Haa godɗo ela dum hoore. Fijirde non. Naa bee njamndi.

Feere kam jaɓɓe min unata, min ngada. Doo kam naawataa, elataa godɗo. **Gagay.**

Yawɓe mbi'a: "Naa aan naawnani yam ɓinngel nii?"

Suy, wara nasta. Aan boo to baaba maa laari, nasta. Nyannde feere, haa wuro fuu haɓa kadi. Asee maa, dum guusa meere no. Wartiri haɓre nder wuro. Ndotti'en kaɓa, mbalmootira. A yi'i naa welaa?

Haala nderkaaku, dum boodɗum, kalluɗum.

(23/1/1992)

²⁵ *Guerre*, dum haɓre bee Faransaare.

VII. PAWNE BANNDU

63. Yaroode

Yaroode²⁶ doo, minin Giziga'en Marwa doo, wadooƙe mal kam walaa. Fulɓe, Manndara'en, Sirata'en, kamɓe ɓen, yarata fikkon amin. Wakkati man don, warti ba juulnordu. Bana saa'i jaangol ba jonta nii. Be wadtaa dum lewru mars kam. Bana *décembre, janvier, février* doo. Taa dum wadɗa kuuduuje.

Suy, ɓe ngara. Godɗo man to wari haa wuro, walla fuufa luwal maako, pepee pepee, suy, ewna yimɓe. Be ngara. Bikkon ngara. "Moofu fikkon." Wannjamjo. Be ngara ɓe yara fikkon kadi, pak pak pak. Banndu fuu.

To yarataa, ɓe kuɗa kadi. To a ɓinngel maa, fikkon ban maadɗa sala jaɓgo maa. A nastataa caka maɓɓe. Be don tokki hudgo maa nii, haa ɓe mettina ɓernde.

Suy, aan boo ɓernde maa jafa kadi.

Miin kam Abba yari yam. Abba Palarjo. O don jotta fuu. Abba Sirataajo. Yaake man, duubi am jeedifi no. Naawi jamum. Baaba kam sali. Miin wi'i. O yamaayno haala man.

Suy, ɓe don yara fikkon goo, nde fikkon cafti hudgo yam, suy, mi waancidittaa bee maɓɓe. Miin boo mi ɓerni. Njah-mi yam-mi baaba am. Mi tawaay mo sam. Mi ɗaɓɓiti mo haa wuro. Mbi'-mi: "Sey ndokkaa-mi ceede. Miin boo mi yaha wada." O wi'i yam: "A yidi naa?" Mbi'-mi: "Ooho."

Suy, o wurtini, mi anndaa to siisihon ɗifon, dume naa. O hokki yam. Ndoggu-mi bee seyo. Tap tap tap tap. Ton njah-mi taw-mi ɓe don yara ɓinngel feere nii. Be don ndari dow maako. "Taa woy. Taa woy. Taa woy. Taa woy." Yimɓeeji kawti.

Suy, ɓe mbi'i: mi wara. Miin boo mi yehi kadi. Mi lii'i ceede am goo, mi hokki mo.

Suy, o laɓi yam hoore.

Suy, o wallini yam kadi. O waddi beluuhi maako. **Bila** bee Gizigaare. O fuddi jo"ingo, yari, yari, yari, yari. A yaman naawi du? Naa to ɓe ngadɗa nde ɗiɗi kam tagu jaɓataa? Yari, yari, yari, timmini. Kadiboo, jokki doo, yari, yari, timmini. Wakeere doo timmi. Be ngayliti yam kadiboo. Be yari doo, yari, yari, timmini, jokki doo, yari, timmini.

²⁶ Cah kam yaroode.

Suy, 6e yummini yam. Be njo"ini yam. Be yari doo. Caka man. Be mbi'i "Taa woy. Taa woy. Bikkon pat woyataa. Haa toy ngaancataa? Gal toy a tammi waancugo nii nii nii nii?" Yarii6e mbi'i boo: "Taa kultoraa. Taa nyiddinaa yeeso." Be yari doo ceet haa yotti doo. To goddo huli kam nastan gite kadi?

Suy, 6e yari 6e timmini. Be yari juude. Juude kam maa 6e ngejjitino.

Suy, 6e acci. Haa mi yummo, "A"aa, nanngée mo. War war war." Be yari juude boo. Kanjum 6uri. Jotta doo, to mi laari juude doo, don naawa-mmi. Ndikkana-mmi doo.

Rew6e kam 6e yara gal endi doo. Booyma kam maa haa doo. Jee rew6e doo tullan naawgo.

Nde 6e yari 6e timmini, 6e nanngi yam junngo. Naa, a yi'i, mi yi'ataa yiyam fuu? Gite ma66i.

Suy, 6e njehi 6e njaari yam saare. Be ngaddi toomndi suudu doo, kilbu, cittaaje. Be uni 6e nami.

Suy, 6e nguji pak pak pak doo, ba 6ernde am wurtoto yaasi. Haa ton doo, mi fudfi woygo kadi, sedfa.

Balde tati kam nyaamgo kam walaa. Nyiiri doo, sey 6e dumaano ba murlere goo sedfa ngam a waawataa ma66ititgo hunnduko. Hunnduko 6a6ataa sam. To a fudfi ba haa a nyaama nii goo nii, bana yiite goo. Sey gaari tis tis tis non. Balde tati kam nyaamgo goonga walaa.

Suy, nde mi he6ti hakkiilo, suy, minyam'en doo haafi bee Ndujja bee Faadimatu, Jebba.

Yoo, tokkii6e 6aawo kam mbi'-mi 6e nja6ataa. Miin sali kadi. Taa 6e yar6 6e.

Suy, mi hada 6e. Dabiya timmi her amin.

(10/1/1990)

64. Moorgo

Be mooran bee boodfum.

(25/2/1992)

65. Pade

Pade boo 6e cooda haa Ful6e kadi. 'Be poonda, 6e poonda, 6e poonda, suy, 6e nyootana 6e. Koo pade nguruuje doo boo, 6e ngadtaa. 'Be ngidaa. Naa Ful6e don nii, min kuunataa 6e naa? Ceede amin don.

Tarak, dum pade.

(10/1/1993)

66. Dankici

Dankici, minin kam. **Sirla** kam sirla.

(10/1/1993)

67. Zana

Limce rew6e kam **zana**. **Biy Marva** meedaay haako sam. Baaba am maa yi'aay. Min pini tawi limce. Baaba am maa fini tawi limce.

(10/1/1993)

68. Gogor

Gogor kam Mbanan'en ngadta dum. Giziga'en anndaano dum. Giziga'en jillu6e, teema, bee Mundaŋ'en gal ma66e ton ngadi dum haa lesdi Minndif. Buduruwan'en ngadanno **bokrom**, waatoo, oldiri. **Sasay** boo bee laraal 6e ngadirta dum. Binngel dewel ha66anno dum.

(10/1/1993)

VIII. KUUDE NDER HITAA NDE WOORE

69. Duumol

Juin haa dilla *juillet*, *août*, *septembre*'en doo, doo boo naa duumol? 'Be don mbi'a **viya**.

Nder duumol kam 6e ɓaɗataa kadi. Be njalan. Be mbi'a kuugal duufi. Debbo ɓaɗi nder duumol kam naa woodataa? Huli kuugal. Reena haa to **sifi** wadi.

(27/1/1992)

70. Dabbunde

Dabbunde kam naa saa'i gawri don ɓennda. Yoo, daga *septembre* haa haa yaha *octobre*, *novembre*, doo boo **sifi** kadi. Kanjum boo haa dum yaha jokka ceedu. Don kadi 6e ɓaɗata kadi.

(27/1/1992)

71. Ceedu

Ceedu²⁷ kam fudfa daga *mars* nii, *avril* nii, haa yaha gal *mai*.

(27/1/1992)

72. Daga demal haa codal

Muwar dum ngalɓere. Ɗalɓere fotan bee piyki duule. Ceedu timmi haa duumol nasta. Wodɓe mbi'a: "Ɗalɓere wadi." Wodɓe mbi'a: "Piyki duule wadi." Ndaa guldum, ndaa ndiyam. Be aawa kadi.

A yi'i **muwar** doo, 6e taaski ngesa, 6e don ndeeni. Godɗo timminaay taskitingo, godɗo timminaay tiitgo suudu mum. Nii, kam, to **muwar** to ɓadi doo, 6e don taaskano kadi timmitingo kuude ceedu kam fuu. Mo timminaay tiitgo suudu mum timmina. Mo timminaay gese mum wuuwa. Kadi kuude pamare, pamare, 6e kuuwa, hiddeko **muwar** yotto. To **muwar** yottake, ndiyam aranam to wari, koo moye wurtina aawdi mum, liira haa naange, sorɓa.

²⁷ **Hen pas** kam ceedu.

Booyma kam cammeeje non. Aawdi kam fuu kadi, ɛe ta'a sammeere ɛe ngartira haa saare. Be njo"ina dow beembal. Doo kam koo weelo worge maa, a waawataa hoocugo aawdi nyaama kam. Aawdi kam a don ayni ndi nii, haa to **muwar** wadi, ndokkaa rewɛe maa corɓa. Be corɓa, ɛe njaarta, laɓɓina tal.

Yowwaa, to ndiyam aranam wari, baaba saare hooca gawri goo nder booro maako, nii, tinyeere jo"ina ton. Hooca agogumri kaadamri. To o hirsi o rufi yiyam, aawa. Ban ndotti'en booyma kam mbaɗanno. To aawi, reena deydey asaweere woore. To gawri fufi seɗɗa nii, ɛe njaha ɛe kardo kadi. Gal babal hudo hudo hudo fuu, ɛe aarta ɛe kardo. Be ndema. Be don ndema, ɛe don ndema haa duumol wara nasta. Be don ndema kadiboo, ɛe timmina bodeewal. Bodeewal fotan bee kardawal. Be timmini bodeewal kadi. Be ndeena seɗɗa kadiboo, asaweere, koo didi.

Suy, ɛe puɗɗa juuya. Be njuuya kadi. Timmina. To ɛe timmini juuya, ɛe munya seɗɗa goo kadiboo. To hudo warti, ɛe njaha ɛe ɓora kadi. Bori ɓori. Laɓɓina les gawri kam laaɓa tal, wooda.

Yowwaa, to gawri mawni, ɛe ndeena kadi haa ndi wuufa, ndi ɓennda.

Yowwaa, to ndi ɓenndi, deydey nyaamgo. Be potaay nyaamgo tawon kadi. Sey ɛe ngadi al'aada man. Be kooca goddum goddum ɛe kirsa bana gertoode'en, ndufa yiyam.

Suy, ɛe puɗɗa nyaamgo kadi.

Yowwaa, ɛe ndeena. Goddo mo gawri maako nder beembal timmi, yaha itta seɗɗa nii, daga gawri dari dow, wara liira haa naange. Nden, ɛe corɓa. Be ndefana ɓikkon nyaama. Ban nii, haa haa haa saa'i sodgo wara yotto.

Yoo, saa'i sodgo wari boo, ɛe njahataa non, ɛe puɗɗa non, sey to ɛe ngadi al'aada man. Kadiboo, foroy ɛe koocan gertogal kam. Be njaara kaadamri nii. Be njaha ɛe puɗɗa seɗɗa, haa babal man doo, ɛe ngadi tari²⁸ nii gal doo, nii gal doo, nii gal doo, nii gal doo, nay kuucootiri kadi. Nay. Doo kam ɛe acca gawri baakin jabbe tati, nay, don dari dow kam haa ɛe coda gal feere kam pat ɛe timmina. To ɛe codi, ɛe ngadi tari timmi, ɛe ngara ɛe taya. Be yama rewɛe ngara ada.

Yowwaa, haa to ɛe timmini taygo pat, gawri ngonndi kam fuu kadi ɛe ngara, ɛe taya boo gawri her ɛe ngadi al'aada goo.

²⁸ Tarol gootol. Tari duuddi.

Yowwaa, taya ndin boo, doo kam daada saare bee baaba saare. Baaba saare wara taya. Daada saare boo wadda silaawo mum. Be njaara kadi haa laarre dow waagaare gawri goo. To 6e njaari doo, kayri kam 6e njo"ina dow, caka cak dow gawri goo. Be ngadda, 6e dfa cammeeje nii nii nii sui, 6e mbi'a: "Doo gawri kuli." Kanjum kam fiyataake. Haa to 6e piyi waagaare gawri, 6e koori saare, 6e kooa cammeeje goo boo. Be njaara saare. Be njo"ina dow beembal bee silaawo. Kanjum wi'ete piyol.

Suy, nii kam 6e timmini kuugal kadi. Doo kam 6e loowi gawri nder beembal walaa nyaamdo ndi boo, sey to saa'i man yotti, baaba saare wada al'aada fahin, fudda nyaamgo gawri kesri. Malla goddo feere wadda holsere, goddo feere hirsu gertogal, rufa yiyyam. Nden 6e nokka gawri goo bee tummude, ngadda 6e ndokka rew6e. Be mbi'a: "Min pudfi nyaamgo gawri hikka."

Yowwaa, nden kadi, 6e tokkan nastugo beembal, tum 6e kooa gawri kadi. Tinaa non kam fuu rew6e ka6da, nyaama ndi ngodndi bee dabare ma66e sedfa sedfa. Gawri baaba saare kam don sigi non. Naa dabare? Meemataa ndi maako sam. Sey to o laari bana duumol 6adake, 6e pudfata hokkugo 6e ndi maako. Naa nii 6e ngadata?

(27/1/1992)

73. Demal

Mi ekkiti demal haa saare baaba am don nii. Baaba am demoowo. Min ndema gawri. Gawri duumorri doo, muskwaari doo, kanjum wi'ete gawri ndi 6e ndemata har amin.

Sinaa li'eere kam min ndeman. Biriji boo 6e ndeman.

Min ngadfan baskooje, nyebbe, ko nanndi bee kuuje sedfa sedfa doo.

Min pini tawi kuugal man. Haa amin kam walaa ekkitina 6inngel ndemri. Be njaha ladde nii.

Aan kam to duubi maa yottake jeego nii. A don fija bee baaneewo tan. A don rema 6aawo cuufi'en, 6aawo calaaje'en doo, remda aawre fuu. Be padfa. Kadiboo, janngo boo, hooa non nii. Be padfa, sey, 6e ekkitine kadi. O wi'a: "Doo kam gawri taa remu." Nyebbe boo wi'a: "Doo nyebbe. Taa remu. To a don rema doo, sui, accaa doo kam. Sinaa non kam remda fuu non." Ban nii, sedfa nii haa woowa kadi.

Aawgo boo 6e ekkatina. Don 6adidina aawre boo, 6e koola. "Naa ban nii, 6e aawrata. Sey daaynina sedfa sedfa. To a don rema boo, usta gawri, doofa. Doofa acca didi, tati, nay. Taa accu wukkere wukkere nii doo, mawnataa." Ban nii yim6e tokki nii haa haa haa ekkiti dum kadi.

To ndiyam fuddi to6go, minin kam haa amin peeri gite ndaari kam, to ndiyam to6i, ndiyam aranam to6i doo, 6e mbuuwi gese, 6e la66ini, to saa'i aawre wacfi, koo moye fuu wurtina aawdi mum. Be liira tawon haa naange. To 6e liiri, yoori, 6e cor6a. Cor6a 6e njaarta. To jaarti nii, dillugo ladde kadi.

Beberwal don haa amin doo. Bee Gizigaare kam **bebe**. Kanjum Ful6e kooci. Be loowata gawri kam faandu. Dum kam wi'ete **vala** bee Gizigaare. Faandu aawrudu kadi. Be njaha bee man.

Debbo boo don defa haa saare. Gorko aarta dilla. Don aawa, don aawa, don aawa nii, haa to naange 6aŋti nii, debbo warlawaay nii, 6aŋta gite, laara laawol saare. Naa weelo nasti reedu kadi? Sedfa nii eewa debbo don wara.

Yaake tagu aawata doo, tagu hoosan ngawon sedfa kadi. Doo kam limataake kadi. Aan kam foonda bee hoore nii. Feere wadan koo sappo. Feere 6uran sappo. A yi'i naa foondataake kal kal? To a foondi sedfa sedfa, feere kam fudataa maa sam.

Yowwaa, to a wadi wukkere wukkere wukkere doo, to fudoyi, rema kadi. Saa'i remgo, a don usta gawri, doofa acca tati, nay kadi. Haa pallel marngel semmbe, a acca baakin nay, jowi boo yahan.

Yoo, haa pallel tampungel boo, acca didi, tati.

Mawni sedfa kadiboo, remta, juuya kadi. Mo"ina les maajum booddum. Haa pallel feere, wada rema nde tati. Feere boo, nde didi. Haa lesdi mboodndi nonnon, ngesa mboodka bana kesa boo, demal gootal boo heyan.

Ayna, ayna haa haa haa 6ennda.

Booyma kam haa aawa kam *juin, juillet, août, septembre*, suy, 6enndi. *Août* maa 6enndan haa pallel feere.

Baawo don, codol kadi. Be coda 6e taya, mbaaga. Soda haa les, nden, wada tari tari nii.

Yoo, to wadi tari, wara kadi taya, yaara, waaga haa larre. Babal man don. Koo moy fuu wadda ndi maako haa ton. Cakkinnaa gite, tawaa baagaaje gawri don mbaali non. Daga doo haa gada janngirde too doo, fuu baagaaje gawri. Booyma kam nii 6e ngadanno. Jotta kam 6e acci. Koo moy fuu nder ngesa maako nonnon nii, waaga, suy, fiya. A yi'ataa nde 6e codata, nde 6e piyata. Fuu a yi'ataa kadi.

Ammaa booyma kam seyto fe maatootiri booddum: “Jotta kam saa’i sodgo wadi, min pudfan asaweere warannde kam, pudfen.” Be njaha yimbe pat njaha pudfa.

Taygo goo boo fe taya haa fellere woore haa duura. Be pudfa fiygo kadi, gootel gootel haa fe timmina. Ammaa jotta kam sam. Koo moy fuu waaso non. Be njastan naa noy naa? Faamataa.

Baawo don, a acca ndi haa yaasi. Walaa aynoowo. Be ngujjataano. Jotta kam fe taya kadi. Yaroo fe mbal doo, goddo yaha bee buhuure maako nii, taya taya. Yaha soora daada mbal’ en haa hefa yarda giya tan. Sunaa non kam fe ngujjataano. Be accan ndi haa duura. Feere kam wadan lewru maa, don waali. Haa ndiyam wara tawa, feere kam. Gawri don. Karal kam.

To fe moofti fe piyi, bamde kooca kadi. Bana fattude hawta, fe piya kadi. “Janngo mi fiyan gawri am.” Be ndilla fe piya. Oya boo janngo boo non. Be mbalootiranno ban nii.

Wanndayre bee cabbi. **Ganday** bee Gizigaare. **Wulgar** doo jee fiygo gawri. O don bee hoore bana gaafaangal nii doo. Dum tappirgal gawri. **Ganday** boo loosol non, jee fiygo kuuje kadi.

Gimol kam doon. Walaa mbaggu kam. Be ngiman non. Beldum meere. Yimre man doo, mi waawan naa? Mi anndaa dum.

Be moofta gawri haa beembal. Wartira haa saare *direct* nder beembal. Doo kam walaa meemgo kadi. Al’aadaaji don. Seyto wakkati fudfugo nyaamgo man wadi, fe kooca gawri kesri goo, fe ngacfa juulde. Goddo sooda gertogal kaadamwal nii, agogumri kaadamri, fuddira bee man.

Goddo feere sooda holsere nagge, nyolna, yoorna. To yoori, fe” a bee nyebbe, wadda defa aartira nyaamgo gawri kesri kadi. Be mbolwa haala maβe. Haa Alla wada barka kadi. Suy, fe nyaama. Be anndi jotta kam fe pudfi nyaamgo kadi. Sinaa non kam walaa nyaamgo.

Duumorri tan. Sey njigaari. **Galanj**. Koo to gawri walaa sam, sey fe njaha fe daββita **galanj** man sedfa deydey jur junngo nii. **Babaranj, gagazanj** fuu naa kadi? Be njilla bee muskwaari kadi. Doo kam yahan.

Muskwaari²⁹ kam fe mbi’a gawri Fulbe. Be faalataa. Kanjum kam walaa al’aada dow maari sam. **Daw Plata**. Koo fe ngadan kuli maa fe koocataa gawri man kam.

²⁹ Muskwaari kam **mosoko** wi’ete.

Cerge³⁰ kam gawri Mofu'en ngaddi. Minin kam min anndaano. Ammaa jotta kam min ndeman ndi jamum, ngam ndi haɓɓan bee bone. Koo ngesa waati boo, duuli wonnataa bana njigaari kam. A heɓan seɗɗa kam. Duuli kam nanngataa cerge kam. **Zlarawoy** fuu naa asngol cerge? Doo boo wari gaa'e gaa'e kadi. **Zlarawoy** kam *jaune jaune* nii. **Zlarawoy** nanndi bee ajagamaari. To a don yakka ndi saa'i kecciri kam beldum. Ammaa defgo nyiiri man boo welataa jamum. Njigaari kam haacdataa sam.

Min pini tawi masarji kam. Ammaa ɓe ndemataa jur. Deydey ngam yakkugo tan. To saa'i gawri to timmi, ndi don ɓennda. Nyaamataake gawri. Kiidndi boo timmi. Feere kam don wada ban nii. Yaake maajum ɓe yakka masarji. Malla haako nyebbe, ɓe ndefa ɓe duffina Haako waygoore doo, mborho. Follere boo ɓe kawta bee baskooje, ɓe ngada njakanjaka. Dum boo ɓe ndefa. Bikkon njara. Nyiiri to heɓi seɗɗa senndana fikkon nyaama, nii ɓe mbi'ata. Ammaa miin naa mi jokkaay dum?

To pelpeleeji don nii, suy kadi. Njigaari boo don nii, parawe don nii, weelo kam doggi. Parawe boo ɓe coodan. De ngaran gal lesdi fuunaange nii kadi? Yimɓe yahooɓe gal fuunaange nii ngaddata? Lidɗi mbelataa ba ɓooyma. Nyaamdu beldum kam woodaa.

(23/1/1992)

74. Surga

A laari ngesa maa ɓuri maa semmbe. A waawataa remgo bee law. Dum don salora. Ndefaa mbal, yamaa yimɓe wallooɓe: "Nyalaade wanciire miin kam surga am don wade." O yewna koo moy fuu wara. Mo Alla waawni fuu. Yimɓe boo njahan non. Naa ban hannde doo. Yimɓe baakin cappande nayo, cappande njowo fuu njaha haa ngesa ngoota. Be ndema jotta nii, timma, laaɓa tal. Suy, siwtake.

Cuy, defa mbal. Defataa maa nyiiri. Yara nii. Be don ce yi boo, boodɗum meere. Mballi wayne. Nganyaandi walaa. Surga kam **hulum** bee Gizigaare.

Be njaha bee bawɗi baakin didi, tati. Don piya, ngima. Be ndema. Girlim girlim. Cawal boo yahan, ammaa cawal kam nafataa jur haa surgu gawri.

³⁰ Cerge kam **mugujufoy** wi'ete. Woodi huunde wi'eteende **marda**. Dum kam *éleusine* bee Nasaaraare.

Yaake 6e piyata kam, 6e ngadataa surga. Surga hudo kam don. Be njaha 6e mba'oya hudo haa hooseere. Be ngadda moy fuu waare, waare, waare, 6e tidfa. Baakin ko tiitata cuudi tati nay. Kanjum kam surga man don. To a yehi nii, ngaddaa. Nii waare. Ngadda teema baakin tati nay. A roonda wadda. Tiitiho. Famdi. Jotta kam 6e ngadan naa? Naa kooseeje man boo mbaati? Be ndemdi kooseeje man fuu. Hudo goonga walaa fayin. Tampi. Wonni. Kacakaca. Walaa huunde geleŋ sam. Sey to a yehi daaydum haa ca66al hooseere. Nden, fudfdata he6go sedfa. Ammaa 6ooyma kam haa becce kooseeje nii, haa caftaa. Mba'aa haa caftaa.

Surga cekke boo don. Hudo cekke njahaa, moy fuu wara wama. Ban nii, 6e ndokke. Mi anndi wango ammaa anndaa boodfum. Nyalde, a wadataa koo cekke difi, tati naa? Haa waaw6e. Hudo cekke, dum wajaalo, araraaho. Ammaa wajaalo kam burdan woodgo kadi.

Surga tiitgo suudu don.

Surga debbo, doo boo, yahan ngam yaha rema. Yaha rema ngesa esiraawo. Njaaranaa esiraawo surga. To 6inngel maa heewti, yottake, sukaa6e don muuya, a yidi, surga kam a saftan. Oo wadda. Oo wadda. Oo wadda. Ngesa kam haa da66itaa gese kadi. Ke'ataa. To woodi mayaba kadi. Sey ngurtinaa mbal ndokkaa 6e. Be njara. Cuy.

Feere kam heeddifiraa6e, to gese keeddootiri, to 6e ngaddani yam surga, ngesa am timmi nii, 6e forna haa ngesa maa boo. To godfo feere don boo, 6e ndema fahin. Timmitina. Kanjum 6inngel maa waci valeur kadi. Booyma kam yim6e don narri.

Naa ferdu hadi 6e wadgo surga. Koo moy fuu hoore muudum laarata. Nyaamdugo maa yim6e nyaamdataa nii? Fergo zamaanu mo"ini haala, wonni haala. Hokki yim6e annde, fisti narral yim6e. Be don ndaara wadoo6e bana bilki'en. Asee maa naa bilki'en haa am kam. Ammaa lakkol'en kam don ndaara ba bilki'en. Nasaara Faransa wonni yim6e.

(23/1/1992)

75. Kuude ceeɗu

Suy, 6e tokko kadi, 6e taaska kadiboo, to gawri warti saare, 6e timmini kuude ma66e, nden kam ceeɗu kadi. Be mba'a hudooji ngam tiitgo cuudi.

Yowwaa, 6e mbuuwa gese, 6e kuuwa kuude ceeɗu kam fuu.
Cannyoowo sannya. Debbo motta.

Nden kadi, 6e keɓa limce. Gabagaaji 6e mbi'ata. Godɗo warti
bana sana'a maako non. Fulɓe ngaddana mo gaaraaji. O sannyana
6e.

Yowwaa, debbo boo don motta. Ban nii, 6e njoɓa 6e kadi. Godɗo
feere boo huuwana hoore mum. Godɗo feere boo ngam njoɓaari 6e
njoɓa dum. Nii kuude maɓɓe ceeɗu.

Kuude duudataa jamum kam. Ammaa kuude pamare pamare
don. Yoo, mahgo beembe. Wamgo cekke'en. Yargo mbal.

Gizigaajo jabataa haa huuwana Fulɓe doo caɗɗum. Bana ɓooyma
gal amin doo kam. Be ngidaa. Koo laafere boo, maaya non. Yidaa.

Ammaa jotta kam 6e don ngacɗa seɗɗa seɗɗa. Ammaa haa doo
kam 6e njabataa. Be ndillan haa lesdi ngodndi feere. Bana Garwa,
Yahunde'en doo, to 6e njehi, 6e kuuwan. Ammaa haa doo, 6e anndi
doo bii wayne, doo wayne. Nii, don huuwana Pullo kam 6e ngidaa.
Kanjum kam mawnitaare kadi.

(27/1/1992)

76. Mosoko

Karal kam **mosoko**. **Mosoko** kam bana wi'go muskwaari.
Moogazaŋ'en kam fini tawi karal. Koo to 6e pini tawaay boo, 6e
nduurdi bee kuugal karal.

(22/2/1993)

77. Kuugal worɓe

Sana'a gorko kam remgo. Rema heɓa gawri, nyaamna saare. To
ɗuudi boo, hokka nyamaande gawri.³¹ Doo 6e mbi'an godɗo oo
yottake. Ammaa huuwataa, heɓataa nyaama, sey rooka malla yaha
hooa nyamaande, nden boo hokkitittaa doo, 6e njalan godɗo man
ngam maajum. Kanjum wadi Giziga'en kam pat gal ndemri kam 6e
pijataa. Be ndema nii. Debbo, gorko fuu, to saa'i remgo wadi, 6e
don nder ladde, 6e ndema. Be keɓa gawri. Cemmbiddum man.

³¹ Nyamaande gawri kam hataka wi'ete.

Didafum man boo naa bana ceefu kam, a yi'i, gorko wafan sana'a mum bana mi wi'i, o sannyan. Goddo feere filan. Goddo feere hirsan. Kirsoowo non o don hirsan. O banngaaro?

(27/1/1992)

78. Kuugal rewbe

Rewbe boo, mottando don motta. Defoowo mbal ngam filgo don defa, soora. Filooobe lidfi'en tistis haa luumo don fila. Nii non be kefrata kambe boo kuuje, nii, ceede. Filan, reman. Nii, kambe kam.

(27/1/1992)

79. Arasl Biy Marva

Ammaa haa al'aadaaji ma6be kam, ban to duumol wafi, hiddeko be pudfa nyaamgo kuuje kese, bana koo follere, koo gawri, koo dume, sey Biy Marva wafa al'aada man tawon kadi. To al'aada man nyaami, fudfi nyaamgo. Beya boo nyaama. Tinaa non kam fuu be mbaawataa. Sey to be nani **Biy Marva** fudfi nyaami, kambe boo be ngafa. Koo jotta boo. Ammaa kadi bee ferdu Nasaara bee zamanu, kuuje man don kalka kadi. Ammaa al'aada man don. Innde man don. **Arasl Biy Marva**. **Arasl** doo, follere. Sey be njuula juulde follere doo tawon, be pudfa nyaamgo kuuje kecce kecce. Sinaa non kam fuu wadataa.

Too, **Biy Marva** man wafi al'aada man defa, hirsan, defa mbal, fudfa nyaamgo kadi. Yewna yimbe be ngafa juulde, be ngama.

Yowwaa, baawo don wafa balde sappoo e nay, sappoo e jowafre man kadi be ngafa juulde mawnde. **Muguzlum** kadi. **Muguzlum Biy Marva**.

Yoo, duumol ba lewru *août* doo nii, juulde man wafanno.

Yoo, **masahay** darnata nyannde man.

(4/3/1986)

80. Sedege

Sedege, bana sadaka. Kanjum kam ba juulde codol kadi. Nde be

ngadi **sedege** man, 6e puɗɗa sodgo gawri. Be puɗɗa fiygo gawri. Sinaa non kam fuu, walaa meemando gawri.

Lewru *septembre*'en. Dum juulde famarde. Kanjum kam 6e maatootirtaa lesdi fuu kam. Fattude fuu kadi. Bana Marwa doo, Kodek, Konngola'en ngada. Wodɓe Dogba boo ndarna nyannde wonnde. Ben boo ngada. Doo kam 6e ngadtaa nyannde woore ba **muguzlum**.

(4/3/1986)

81. **Muguzlum**

To dabbunde wadi, gawri ɓenndi. Be puɗɗi sodgo gawri. Be kirsaa kadiboo, 6e ndefa mbal. Ammaa 6e kirsataa na'i. Sey jottiido hirsata na'i. Godɗo feere be'i non hirsata. Godɗo gertoode.

Nden, defa mbal. Be yewna yimɓe kadi. Yimɓe mo Alla waawni fuu wara, yara. Dum kam nyalde woore non. To duudi nii, nyalde didi.

(4/3/1986)

82. **Kɔɗa sla**

Nyalaade mbargo na'i, dum **kɔɗa sla**. **Kɔɗa sla** kam ba wi'go: "Tappu nagge."

Be don ngada nde woore. Be mbara na'i jur. Kirsaa ndefa.

Yowwaa, jango man boo, **gi kuli**. Wadgo **kuli** kadi. **Kuli** kam Gizigaare. Usa hoore na'i jee hirsugo. Be yewna deerɗum'en ndefa njo"ina geɓe geɓe. Doo yebre wayne, doo yebre wayne, doo yebre wayne, suy, 6e mbolwa haalaaji maɓɓe, 6e mbolwana maayɓe maɓɓe. To woodi hannde yaafuye 6e torata haa maayɓe maɓɓe 6e yama. Woodi gaade feere boo, 6e njarna ɓiɓɓe maɓɓe. Ngam taa hannde nder juulde man, jango man juulde don, taa wodɓe halluɓe ngara ciira ɓikkon maɓɓe, bee ledde bee kuuje feere feere. Malla wodɓe ngadda habaru nyawuuji ndaamna yimɓe kadi.

Suy, 6e ɓenndina ɓalli maɓɓe nyannde man kam.

Nden, hiira. Deydey subaha baɓɓol, mawɗo lesdi masahay kadi wurto bee yiite. Wurta bee yulmere yiite wodeere coy, wada nii, suy, sakkina dow jiddere, wooka. Be piya bawɗi.

Suy, koo moye fuu wurtina yiite mum sakkina. Kanjum wadi lebbi sappo e didi yotti. Juulde wadi. Be ngetta Allaa kadi. Be ceya. Janngo man kadi nyannde seyo kadi. Be nyaama, 6e njara, 6e ngama, 6e piya cawal, wammbaabe ngara daga lesde feere feere, kawta, don pija kadi haa nyalde tati. Booyma kam nyalde jeedidi, fuu 6e don nder seyo man kadi. Be don nyaama kusel na'i 6e kirsunoo goo. Be don njara mbalji ma66e. Be don ngama. Ful6e ngidaa wi'go juulde. Be mbi'a lakkirde Giziga'en wadi. Naa yawaare kadi?

(4/3/1986)

IX. SANIYAAJI

83. Sannyoo6e

Cannyirgal kam dum kuugal ma66e. Be pini 6e tawi dum kam6e kam. Be kannyan. Koo baaba am boo donno sannya saa'i mi binngel. Hannde nii to kuuje man kawti, o sannyan. Ammaa miin kam mi meedaay. Be kannyan bana ceedu. Ceedu kam to rew6e don motta, suy, wor6e boo njaha ngeesa dum nii, kawta mo"itina. Pe" a lekkon maajum doo, tigga.

Yoo, woodi leggal feere nii, ba mashin, sey to a laari, dum kaayefijum jamum. Doo kam koo mi waawataa tinndingo maa boo, dum *machine* zaata nii. Mi anndaa moye hokki 6e hakkiilo maajum.

Yowwaa, 6e kannya kadi gabagaaaji maajum. **Gabaga** doo Gizigaare. Ful6e ngaddana 6e, hannde, gaaraaji.

Yowwaa, 6e kannyana 6e kadi. Be njoba 6e. **Gəgəmay**, dum hottollo. Gaaraaji boo **gəgəmay** non. Doo geese, doo palle, doo worsere. A faamataa inde maajum kam. Min don ngejjita kadi. Be don ewna palle **hur**. **Sar** kam buran **hur** saatgo. **Sar** kam geese.

Yowwaa, to Ful6e ngaddi, 6e kannya, nden, 6e njoba 6e kadi ngeenaari ma66e. Ful6e kam anndaa dum sam. Koo ko 6e anndi gal kuude maajum kam.

(25/2/1992)

Sannyoo6e donno. Ammaa gaa'e gaa'e doo kam wonataa. Sey to wadi jahaangal man ban Godola, gal Ce6e'en doo, heban. Walaa **beke**. Rim6e nii. Dum kuugal ma66e tan. Sana'a ma66e. Sannyugo kam **ji caka**. **Caka** doo kannyargal. **Ji** boo sannyugo.

Debbo sannyataa har amin kam. Mottugo kam debbo. Gorko mottataa. Gorko kam sannya.

Gəgəmay, dum hottollo. **Gabaga**, dum leppol. **Dawra nga gabaga**, dum dawrawol leppiwol. **Zana nga gabaga**.

Yoo, **jiiku nga gabaga** don. Fuu **gabaga** nii.

Kumaaaji kam min sannyan. Ammaa **jiiku** doo, heŋgo man caɗɗum. Koo ndeyere fuu.

(10/1/1993)

84. Nyootgo limce

Giziga'en anndi sannyugo, ammaa haala nyootgo kam Fulɓe ɓuran ɓe. Kamɓe boo to ɓe cannyi, ɓe njaarana Fulɓe nyootana ɓe. Doo kam haala man haayɗini yam.

Yoo, bana limce kam, toggooje kam, wofɓe anndi nyootgo. Ammaa haala kufineeje sargi ɓe. Be anndaa nyootgo hufineere kam. Ngam maajum Gizigaajo wi'i: "Miin kam, **jiiku a da**³², **kumaaaji ra amaka**³³." To mi heɓi jiiku kam naa kumaaaji kam daɗɗataa yam? Haa maɓɓe kam ko sadi woni jiiku, hufineere. Caɗɗum. Doo kam sey godɗo aarta heɓa tawon. "**Jiiku a da kam kumaaaji a ra amaka**." To mi heɓi hufineere kam toye toggooje boo yahata?

To ɓe cannyi, ɓe nyootana rewɓe maɓɓe. Be njaha, ɓe cuuwa nder gooyli. Debbo jottiido haaje kadi. Be don ewna buutu Japay. Malla lipillaare. **Lapila**, dum Gizigaare. **Gomboro**. **Gomboro** doo, ɓe ngadda ɓaleewol, ɓe ngadda daneewol, ɓe ngadda ɓaleewol. Gommboraare bee Fulfulde. "**A ra tafakaj**³⁴ **gomboro ngos ngu mbur**³⁵ **a lum**³⁶ **gomboro le**." Debbo wayne kam heɓi, ɓe nyootani mo gommboro. Doo kam, ɓurna kam, rewɓe marɓe ginnaaji kaddata dum. Be anndi haala limce kam dagam dagam. Ammaa kuugal hufineere kam ɓe anndaa sam.

Yoo, feere boo, to ɓe njaari haa Fulɓe, haa Fulɓe nyootana ɓe doo, woodi innde kuuje man don feere feere kadi. Be mbi'a: "Toye

³² **A da** kam don.

³³ **A ra amaka** ba wi'go: "O yahan toye?" **Ka ra amaka** kam ba wi'go a yahan toy.

³⁴ **A ra tafakaj** kam wi'go ɓe don nyoota. **A ra tafaj** kam o don nyoota.

³⁵ **Ngos ngu mbur** kam ba wi'go debbo godɗo.

³⁶ **A lum** kam ba wi'go o heɓi.

tattu?" Be ngadda tattu. To ɓe ngaddi, ɓe poondi jee toggoore timmi, Pullo wi'a: "Toye tattu?" O wadda jee tattu goo kadiboo, hokka. O wi'a: "Toye tatattu?" Kadiboo, o wadda. "Toye tatatattu?" Haa nde tati. Hiddeko ɓe timminana, Gizigaajo toggoore woore, Pullo heɓi tema toggooje diɗi nder don. Kadiboo yoɓa mo. Wuyɓe Fulɓe ɓe ɓe ngi'daa ɓe.

(25/2/1992)

85. Wannjam'en

Wannjamjo don. Woodi beluuje maɓɓe ɓooyma ɓe laɓrata doo, nanndaa bee beluuje Fulɓe ngi'ataa jotta doo. Don ba pe'irgel nii. Feyyuure.

Yowwaa, bee maajum, ɓe kuuwranno kadi.

Yaroode ngi'ataa doo boo fuu, ɓurna kam bee kuuje man. Pamarel man don nii, ban nii, ɓe yarirta kadi.

To ɓe yaran ɓikkon maa, **Abba muciha zuj**³⁷. **Muciha mezlej**³⁸ soo le. **Muciha a** soo le. **Muciha** doo kam wannjamjo. **Misli kaciya**³⁹ a soo le. Juulnoowo wari.

(25/2/1992)

86. Misli ishe

Misli ishe⁴⁰ soo le. Kirsoowo wari.

To yidi kuugal, huuwa non. Godɗo to baaba maako don hirsaa, o tokka kuugal baaba kadi. Godɗo boo yidaa. Ammaa walaa asngol, lenyol maɓɓe nonnon, don hirsaa, lenyol hirsooɓe non kam walaa.

(25/2/1992)

³⁷ **Abba muciha zuj** kam Abba yaroowo ɓinngel. **Zray** kam ɓikkon.

³⁸ **Muciha mezlej** wannjamjo booddo.

³⁹ **Misli kacia** kam juulnoowo. **A ra sli kaciya** kam o don juulna. **Sli** kam ta'go.

⁴⁰ **Misli ishe** kam ba wi'go kirsoowo kusel. **A ra sli aw** kam ba wi'go o don hirsaa mbeewa. **A sla aw le** kam ba wi'go o hirsaa mbeewa. **A slaj** kam o hirsaa.

87. Kuugal kusel

Haala kusel naa? Be don kuuwana hoore maɓɓe. Naa ɓe kuuwanta Fulɓe goo. Sinaa mo he'aay, mo yottaaki hirsugo on kam doole yaha sukano godɗo, finca? Sippana godɗo heɓa kanko boo deydey maako. Nii. Ammaa jottiɗo hirsugo kam yaha bee ceede maako, malla boo, hooa kanko boo ban yimɓe koocata ɗoo nii, o wara o hirsaa, ɓe cippana dum on boo.

(27/1/1992)

88. Beero

Jokka godɗo, malla to silɓere, ɓe kurga. Dum nii. To godɗo yewi, ammaa ngam ɓe njillan kuude maɓɓe kam. Feere kam, koo waawan hurgugo godɗo man meere non boo, sey yaha hirsaa kadi gertogel maako, o laara. "Lekki kiye njahan-mi? Lekki kiye aartan-mi hokkugo mo?" Hirsaa gertogal maako laara. Sakkina laara no gertogal maajum waatirta.

Yowwaa, suy, o yaha kadi. Lekki kazaahi gertogal sappiri. Yaha itta. O wara o fudɗa kadi huuwgo kuugal maajum.

Jokkoowo kam **mudiya vu**⁴¹.

Fooda kaŋ kaŋ kaŋ haɓɓi nii, suy. O demoowo. Innde saaniiji godɗi pat yimɓe ngadta ɗoo pat o huuwan. Ammaa huuwgo kuude karammbaniije feere feere kam walaa. Huuwataa. To huuwi nii, kuude maako njahataa boodɗum. Nii ɓe mbi'ata kadi. Sey o hakkilana kuugal maako ɗoo boodɗum. Taa o jilla kuude maako bee kuugal feere.

Don haa Moogazaŋ boo. Ammaa o maayi. Buuba **Bɔrwaka** maayi. Be donno njaarana mo yimɓe. Jotta sey haa Kooseewa. Woodi **Gajalu** don ton. Besninan, jokkan. To ɓinngel sali wurtaago, debbo danyaay bee koyɗum nii, suy, ɓe njaara haa maako kadi. Dum gorko. Gorko yahata huuwa kuude man kadi. Woodi lekki maako don, meema, meema. To sali, haa ɓuri mo semmbe, feere kam, ɓe don yara kadi. Yara sedɗa. Aan kam koo toye fuu, haa ɓinngel wurtoto man nii, yara sedɗa.

⁴¹ **Diya** kam jokkugo, mo"ingo. **Vu** boo ɓanndu.

Suy, ɓinngel wurta kadi. Kanko kam jotta nii debbo ɓesni, to ɓe njaari haa maako kam. Doo kam Fulɓe maa don ngara ewna mo. Haa Marwa doo maa ɓe don ngara. Be don njaha haa maako. Wurtinan bee junngo. Debbo man maayan non boo, miin kam mi waawataa.

Jotta doo, to o maayi nii, timmi. Ngam ɓikkon maako doo koocaay kuugal maako. Be anndaa. Walaa goddo feere mo anndi kuugal man. Feere maako. Marwa doo nii o don wara, ɓooyma kam. Jotta kam halki. Kanko kam ndaa ɓadake maaygo. Ndottidi jamum. Jotta kam. Waawataa wargo Marwa doo, teema sey bee moota.

(25/2/1992)

89. Annduɓe ledde

Annduɓe ledde don. Haa Moogazaɗ ndotti'en annduɓe ledde timmi. Baaba am doo anndaa. Meedaay fijirgo kuude maajum.

Yoo, woodi bappa maako nii, **Moklasa** o wi'ete. Anndi ledde jamum. Lekki nyawu kuturu maa o hokkete. Saɗawre o hokkete. Tarzagiire, o hokkete. Innde ledde kam pat har maako. Gal Maandara nii o heɓi kuuje. Gal ton o mawni.

Yowwaa, kanko kam o anndi ledde. Ndaa o maayi, anndal maako halki. Bikkon anndaa. O maayi.

Be don ngeeba kuugal man bana kuugal meere goo, asee maa anndal woni don.

Yoo, haa Giziga'en kam feere kam, to ɓinngel narraay bee baaba, baaba boo sappintaa mo lekki man. A yi'i kanjum wi'ete kalludum maajum kadi. To nyannde baaba maayi nii, suy, anndal goo halki. Goddo ba maako wanngataa fahin. Siriw.

(25/2/1992)

90. Laarooɓe

Laarooɓe don. Ammaa mi heɓtataa ɓe jotta kam. Ammaa, bee goonga nii, kuugal man kam don halka. Kuude jee ɓooyma doo, jee ndotti'en doo, bee zamanu Nasaara doo, fuu kuude man kalki. Annde maajum pat majji. To goddo huuwaay kuugal maajum kam, noye majjataa kadi? Walaa, hannde, ɓinngel maako ekkiti kuugal

man. Walaa keeddiddiiko malla banndiiko goddo ekkiti kuugal maajum. To maayi nii, suy. Nyannde 6e iri mo nii, bee anndal pat nder ngaska. Meetataa wanngugo boo.

Be ndaardata bee kaaye, gertoode. Be kirsan. Be cakkinan kufi nii. Woodi wajaalo. Be ngewa nii nii, suy, 6e cakkina, ndaara kadi. "Jahaangal am ngal maran saa'a naa? Malla ngal marataa saa'a?" Laara.

Yoo, to goddo yidi dillugo jahaangal wara haa maako. "Laaranam naa. Mi yidi yahgo pallel waanciire. Laaranam lee. Jahaangal maajum woodi saa'a naa, bee asar." Laara kadi. To laari bee asar maa, o wi'a mo: "Taa yah. Jahaangal maa ngal kam sey munyaa. Munyaa tawon. To a yidi yahgo, munyaa nyalde nii. Njahaa. Ammaa to a yehi jotta jotta doo, dum waddantaa maa jam."

Yoo, to bee saa'a boo, o wi'a mo: "Yah. Jahaangal ngal boodngal." Naa nii?

To goddo yidi diidgo suudu maako. Malla, a yi'i Giziga'en doo eggoo6e jamum. Sinaa ngam hannde, babe cadi 6e kebataa meere meere bana 6ooyma. Sinaa non kam Gizigaajo kam naa waftaa duubi jowi haa fellere woore? Be egga nii. Nyi6go haa ma66e kam safantaa 6e. Ammaa to 6e ngidi eggugo, 6e ndaara tawon kadi. To 6e kirsi gertogal maajum sappini 6e mbaawan nyi6go, suy, o yaha. Nyannde o yahata o fudda kuugal man doo, o diidata doo, o don defa mbal, mba"inaandi gawri, jilla bee maciyaa6e. To yehi, hoo6a, rufa, rufa, rufa, rufa haa wiccina babal man pat. Be mbi'i walaa mo anndite ginnaaji don haa babal man. Haa 6e ndiwa ginnaaji man daga pallel man. Tata joodnde ma66e doo waddana 6e fitina, to 6e ndiwaay ginnaaji gon6i haa ton. Ban nii 6e ndiwrata ginnaaji.

Suy, 6e nyi6a, 6e nasta kadi, njoodo jam. Naa nii, 6e ngadta? Baaba boo don jala non.

Laaroo6e ndaaran 6a6an, 6a6ataa. Debbo man lattataako kaaramaajo naa. Naa doo boo fuu 6e ndaaran? To 6e anndaa baaba 6inngel man bood6um, 6e anndaa asngol 6inngel man bood6um doo, 6e 6a6ataa meere meere. Sey 6e annda 6ii wayne, asngol kazaawol, fuddata accugo 6ikkon ma66e njaha muuya 6id6o debbo man. Sinaa non kam 6e mbi'an to hakkilaay, a 6a6an asngol mistiri'en kadi. Be ngara, 6e ndanya 6ikkon mistirihon corok. Wuro pat kufa asngol wayne kam nyaaman. A yi'i, asngol wonni?

(25/2/1992)

To goddo nyawi, ɓe njaha haa daaroowo laara. Be njaha bee nyebbe nii haa tummulgel, malla gawri bee mannda. Be njaha haa ɓe ndaara nyawu ɓinngel. To dum kuli nanngi ngel, to nyawu Alla non boo, daaroowo laara kadi. To laarani ɓe, to kuli maa, o heɓtani ɓe. O wi'a: "Ndaa, to on kuuci, koocee gertogal irin kazaawal bee noome bee goddum goddum nii. Njahon haa pella kazaayel, accon ton bee innde ɓinngel ngel kadi. On ngadi al'aada dow ɓinngel ko laarani kuli jee nanngi ngel kadi. Be ngara ɓe daɓɓita ko daaroowo wi'i ɓe.

Daaroowo maako nii non tan. Naa **masahay** boo. **Mukursahan** wi'ete. Kanko laarata kadi. Bee kaa'e. Feere, o wolwane ginnaaji maako. Ginnaaji to ngari, suy, di mbolwana mo: "Ndaa dum huunde kazaa nanngata ɓinngel doo."

Suy, daaroowo boo yecca ɓe, yecca saaro'en ɓinngel goo. To ɓe ngarti, ɓe cuklana ko daaroowo wi'i ɓe. Be daɓɓita ko o wi'i ɓe. Be daɓɓita doo. To ɓe daɓɓiti, ɓe ngada ba o wi'i ɓe.

Suy kadi, feere, ɓinngel heɓa daama haa maɓɓe kadi. Nii nuddinki maɓɓe.

(25/1/1992)

91. Nguyka

Gizigaajo kam waawataa yahgo wujjuya feere mum sey o tokkootira bee Pullo. Naa Fulɓe cappini ɓe nguyka⁴² naa?

(25/2/1992)

92. Yeɓre wuyɓe haa Giziga'en

Woodi yeɓre man don. Kamɓe kam ɓe don mbi'a haa lesdi maɓɓe, walla, wuro maɓɓe, to o lattaaki o gujjo, caɗɗum haa o wonda bee maɓɓe. Koo moye sey wujja. A yi'i, naa koo debbo maa boo hudete kadi? "Yimɓe pat ngujja njaha ngadda kuuje, aan a waawataa?" Debbo maa hudete aan boo?

Suy, ɓernde hoosa maa nii, ndillaa, aan boo, njahaa, nastaa.

⁴² Nguyka kam **hul** wi'ete. Gujjo boo **muhul**.

Be don gal hiirnaange nii kadi. Hiirnaange Marwa doo nii. Gal Lulu'en too doo, non ɓe mbi'ata. Doo boo min nanan non. Naa mi yi'anaay gite am kam naa goonga kadi? Ammaa mi don nana ɓe don ngeewta.

(7/2/1992)

93. Wammaaɓe

Bammaaɗo kam **muhərək** non haa amin kam. Dookoowo. Maccudo wadān, dimo wadān to waawi kam. **Migi gagi**, pijoo⁴³ kadi.

Sey juulde Giziga'en tagu nanan **cawal**. Juulde mawnde lewru *août* ban ɓooyma kam. Wadā nyalde jeedidi fuu ɓe don fijan non. Jotta kam haala waati. Innde non tan.

(22/2/1993)

94. Gudi'en

Min don yama koni Giziga'en kam ngalaa gudi'en. Asli pat bee gudi'en maɓɓe. Ammaa Giziga'en kam ngalaa. Ko wadi? Be mbi'i: "Naa Gizigaajo kam walaa gudi?" Ngam to gudiijo maɓɓe joodi, don huuwa, koo moy fuu wara, "Ndaa laɓel am doo, galnanam." Be ngalnana mo. To ɓe ngalnani mo nii, suy, o yummake o dilli. Godɗo boo wara. "Ndaa pe"irgel am. Galnanam." Be ngalnana mo. O yummo o dilla. Godɗo wadda kaafaahi maako maa, masalamhi maako. Be ngalnana mo o dilla. Nii non kadi. Walaa ko o heɓata. O somi meere. O heɓaay.

Suy, ɓe mbi'i o ɓerni. O fusi kuuje maajum.

Suy, o hawti kuuje maajum pat, o sakkini.

Suy, ɓe njoodi bilaa gudi'en kadi.

Min don kuuwra baanooje, laɓe. Ko kuuwroton doo pat, min don kuuwra. Ko Fulɓe kuuwrata, minin boo min don kuuwra. Min coodan bee semmbe amin. Malla gal Mufu'en, malla haa Fulɓe. Naa min don caka cak? Ndaa Fulɓe gal doo. Ndaa Mufu'en gal doo.

⁴³ Fijooɓe kam **migi gagi** hay.

Teema, gal fommbina kam bee gudi'en maɓɓe. Gal **Biy Marva** kam walaa gudiijo sam. Min njokkaaki doo. Be ngidaa dum maa kadi, jotta kam.

(25/2/1992)

95. Gaancoowo

Haa amin kam to goddo joodataako fellere woore, janngo, o don doo, faɓɓi-janngo, o don doo. Hitaande feere, o dilli lesdi ngodndi. Tum o walaa saare. Be don mbi'a o meefi naadingo junngo maako haa caɓɓe jigaawal.

Joodtaako fellere woore kadi. Bana naalaado goo. Nii ɓe mbi'ata. Innde maako walaa bee Gizigaare.

(22/2/1993)

96. Filu

Giziga'en kam duudaa filgo. Filu Giziga'en kam duudaa. Burataa gabagaaji ɓooyma ɓe cannyata doo. Be njaha ɓe cooda.

(25/2/1992)

X. GIZIGAARE

97. Gizigaare Marwa bee Gizigaare Muturuwa

Be mbi'a hooreere kam Marwaare. Kamɓe Muturuwa'en don mbi'a kamɓe mari hooreere. Ammaa kadi ko tampini wolde Marwaare kam ngam ɓurna maɓɓe fuu don cilma, ɓe don ngejjita, acca wolde maɓɓe. Muturuwa'en boo duudanaa silmugo. Kanjum hokki ɓe semmbe. Be don njogii wolde maɓɓe. Ammaa asliire kam Marwaare nii.

Soosayre kam seyto a wurti yaasi Marwa doo kadi. Njahaa tokkaa gal wakeere bana Godola, Mambaŋ, Jeɓe, Kaliyaw, Moogazaŋ, Gayak fuu, Kooseewa haa yotti Dobba. Dobba boo jilli turum turum non.

Marwa	Muturuwa	Fulfulde
hakaw	kaw	mboodi
jomo	ngama	soobaaajo
həraŋ	həraŋŋa	hoore

(4/3/1986)

98. Caangal

Fajiri, “**Ka həŋ**⁴⁴ **zii**⁴⁵ **kwa**^{46?}”

• “**Ka da**⁴⁷ **zii ko**⁴⁸ **nii**.”

“**Kə hənam**⁴⁹ **mbrəke**^{50?}”

“**Kə hənam zii kwa**^{51?}”

“**Ngos hay**⁵² **zuy zuy**?”

“**Zri hay**⁵³ **taa da**⁵⁴ **zuy**?”

Zuy kam delem.

“**Sise**” kam ba wi’go “Usoko.”

“**Sise ŋkum**” kam ba wi’go “Usoko mon.”

“**Sise hada**” kam ba wi’go “Usoko jur.”

“**Sise miya**” kam ba wi’go “Usoko amin.”

“**Ka da zuy ko**⁵⁵ **ni**.”

“**Vuodik**⁵⁶ **zii kwa**” kam ba wi’go “Banndu maa jam naa?”

“**Vuodu**⁵⁷ **zuy**.”

“**Zuy dagay**” kam ba wi’go “Jam tawon.”

⁴⁴ **Ka həŋ** kam a waali.

⁴⁵ **Zii** < **zuy**.

⁴⁶ **Zii kwa** kam jam naa?

⁴⁷ **Ka da** kam a don.

⁴⁸ **Ko** < **kwa**.

⁴⁹ **Kə hənam** kam on mbaali.

⁵⁰ **Mbrəke** kam noy.

⁵¹ “**Kə hənam zii kwa**?” kam “On mbaali jam naa?”

⁵² **Ngos hay** kam rewbe.

⁵³ **Zri hay** kam bikkon.

⁵⁴ **Taa da** kam 6e don.

⁵⁵ **Ka da zuy ko** kam a don jam naa?

⁵⁶ **Vu dik** kam banndu maa.

⁵⁷ **Vu du** kam banndu am.

To asiri, deydey, naange wadi boo, "**Ka vam**⁵⁸ **pas**⁵⁹ **zii kwa?**"
 "On caalini naange jam naa?"
 Yoo, mangariba ban nii boo, "**Gam kud**⁶⁰ **zii kwa?**" "**Zuy,**
dagay⁶¹. **Ngosdek**⁶² **mbrake?**" "**Mezlej**⁶³."
 "Yoo, mezlej. Zuy zuy. Zuy nii."

(4/3/1986)

99. Maŋtoore

Maŋtoore don. To a wadi boodfum kam naa maŋtan? Be maŋtete? Fuu nder gimi. Kamɓe kam.

To a wadani puldebbo mboodeenga, o maŋte kadi. "**Sise, zuŋ ngu buy**⁶⁴. **Sise, zuŋ ngu buy. Sise, a bunu ti zi ngi kiri.**"⁶⁵ Alla lootire bee bu'e rawaandu, bee Fulfulde. Alla loote, Alla barkidine, nii. Kanjum woni ton.

"**A vlu siyfa haa ngesete.**" Alla hokke yonki haa foroy.

"**A jiginu.**" Alla ayne.

"**A vlu ngos mezlej.**" Alla hokke debbo boodfo.

"**A vlu hay mezlej.**" Alla hokke saare woodnde.

"**A vlu zrey.**" Alla hokke fikkon.

"**Kə lum god mezlej tum tum.**" A heɓan kuuje boodde tum tum.

"**Kə anja hərək ta.**" Taa a rooka.

Taa rooka kadi haa yimɓe. A hokke ko nyaamaa. A hokke njogodaa saare maa.

To a wadani puldebbo boodfum doo, koo ndottiijo, nii, o wi'ata kadi. Doo kam naa maŋti kadi? Torani maa barka. Fuu. Haa maɓɓe kam ban nii.

Yimooɓe man timmi. Be ngimataa boodfum bana ɓooyma doo. Be ngiman meere non. Gimi man boo koo, a faamataa. Don kam.

⁵⁸ **Vam** kam nyalli.

⁵⁹ **Pas** kam naange.

⁶⁰ **Gam kud** kam on kiirti.

⁶¹ **Dagay** kam ba wi'go tawon.

⁶² **Ngosdek** kam debbo maa.

⁶³ **Mezlej** kam boodfum.

⁶⁴ **Zuŋ ngu buy** kam ba wi'go ɓii laamiido.

⁶⁵ Malla boo, **bi mulvuŋ a bunu ti zi ngi kiri.**

Gimi di *église* nanndaay bee gimi 6ooyma. Ton man nanndi sedda ammaa nanndaay.

(10/1/1993)

100. Kuudi

Kuudi kam **zivu** wi'ete.

Kuudi kam 6e don ngima nii, 6e don mbolwa innde maako nder gimi ma66e don. Yim6e pat don nja6a, don ngama. Wuro pat. Duniya fuu sankita kadi.

Biirawaandu kam 6e koozi haa Ful6e. Be don mbi'a: "**Ngudi. Caa ngudi.**" Kuudi non tan.

Mokwanj. Mokwanj doo, 6aade 6inngel mo don wada hunnde jee kadaadum. Bana hunnde nde 6e kadi, 6inngel yaha huuwa.

Mokwanj a kuw le.⁶⁶ Nanataa haala. Downtataako.

Kuudi laafere. Biira, **mogodok**. Ban jigaawal. Hunnde maa walaa. A don furdi ba jigaawal non.

Biira, **misi murga**. Doo kam laafudo meere. **Misi viya**, 6ii-boneejo.

Mavay don. Biira, **mavay ngataranj**⁶⁷. Doo kam baaba walaa. Njaaluujo. To a nani ban nii 6e kudi maa doo, sey doofaa lafi non. To woodi daliila kam. A waawataa boo sey munyaa kadi. Ammaa to a waawan kam, ha6. Naawan dey?

Biira, **faas6k**. Faasikiijo non. **Faas6k ngataranj**. Faasikiijo meere.

Misi slar ngataranj. Pewoowo meere.

Muhul. Gujjo.

Mazla⁶⁸ ngos. Noddoowo. **Migi madama**. Jeenoowo.

(10/1/1993)

101. Beke

Pullo non zaata boo min don mbi'a **beke**⁶⁹ non. Woodi kuudi woni nder ton. To 6ernde metti nii, **beke Plata**. "Meere nii, ngaraa

⁶⁶ **A kuw le** kam ba wi'go o halli. **Zuj a kuw le mezlej ta**, kam ba wi'go 6inngel kallungel woodaay.

⁶⁷ **Ngataranj** kam ba wi'go meere.

⁶⁸ **Zla** kam tefugo.

⁶⁹ **Beke** kam ba wi'go maccudo.

pitinaa-mi?" Asee boo, Pullo zaata. A wi'an mo **beke** non. Ngam hakke bernde maa metti. To a jokkiri kam naa bernde maa mettan? Bernde metti boo kuudi wurtan kadi?

Beke goonga boo don. Mo fe soodi soodi soodi.

Yoo, don danya bikkon maako. Naa bikkon **beke**?

Innde kam don ammaa naa bana booyma. Wulaay jaw bana booyma. Booyma kam o remi ngesa maako maa, jawmiiko hooata. Na'i maako maa jawmiiko hooata. Bikkon maa jawmiiko dawranta. Kanko kam meere nonnon, o don rema, o don jogi kuuje meere non, don jogani jawmiiko kadi. Ammaa hannde kam naa ban nii. Don mara kuuje maako bee hoore maako. Don bee bikkon maako haa saare. Naa innde tan non lutti? Hannde maa naa kambe fen laami dow jawmiraafe maβbe? Walaa "Yah huuwana-mmi, wafanam nii, remanam nii." "Yah duranam na'i," nii walaa. Innde non tan.

Naa booyma kam luumo man don, teema kadi. Minin kam min njokkaay dum kam. Miin kam mi jokkaaki dum.

Korɗo kam **beke mongosoj** wi'ete. Maccudo kam **beke mizileŋ** wi'ete.

(10/1/1993)

102. Baararaawol

Hannde, to a don joodi, mi yidi hudgo maa. Aan boo a don. Mi yidaa wanngina kuudi man *direct* dow maa.

Suy, fe baarana hoore am, miin on kadi. Mi wi'a: "Ba miin oo nii, ndaa no mba'-mi nii nii nii," suy, baarana hoore am. A yi'i naa godɗo heɗtataa, miin mi baarani? Sey mo duri hakkiilo am faami fakat mi don baarana godɗo feere, on heɗtata. Ammaa miin mi baarana godɗo, ammaa mi don wolwana dow hoore am. Walla boo, wolwa dow derɗam feere. Walla boo wolwa dow rawaandu. Walla boo, dow wamnde. Walla boo, dow puccu. Asee maa, mi baarani godɗo. Godɗo heɗtataa kadi.

A ra nga taŋ di⁷⁰, waatoo, o don tiggana fe bee tiggani haala man doo. Haala, waatoo, wolde kadi. A tiggani wolde man doo ngam aan. Walla boo ngam godɗo feere. Ko a wolwi doo, naa goonga a wolwi. A baarani godɗo ba wi'go bee Fulfulde kam. Miin a tiggani,

⁷⁰ **A ra nga taŋ di** kam o don baarana fe. **A ra nga ngi i di** kam o don baarana yam.

haa Gizigaare kam, 6e mbi'ata.

Woodaay. Ndikka to a wolwi haa gite maako. Ammaa nii, 6aari 6aari 6aari doo, welaa.

(10/1/1993)

XI. TAALI, BALNDI BEE ANNDITANAMJI

103. Mamba

Mamba naa taalol bee Gizigaare? Saa'i 6ikkon doo, 6e don taalana min kadi. Baabaaji'en don taalani min. Yim6e maw6e maw6e doo, to saa'i taalol wadi nii, 6e taala kadi. Jemma. Bee naange kam 6e taalataa sam.

Tuggu daga lewru *février* doo, haa yotta gal lewru *avril*'en doo, hiddeko ndiyam wara e lesdi doo, taalol kam 6e acca kadi, cuklana kuude godde. Ceedu kadi.

To ndiyam fuddi to6go, 6e mbi'i 6e taalataa. Ammaa miin kam mi don laara bana kuude kadata 6e taalgo kadi. Ammaa 6e taalataa, nii 6e mbi'ata kam. Sey to weeti kadiboo.

To o yidaa taalgo doo, o wi'a: "A'aa, miin kam mi somi. Jotta kam sey on coodanaa yam soodi soodi. Taalana on doo, coodanaa yam goddum. Walla coodanaa yam njaram ngoddam. Coodanaa yam, hannde, parawe."

Yowwaa, o fudda kadiboo, o taala. O he6a gedal maako kadi. Ammaa taala cookum non tum, o yidaa kadi. To o taali sedda nii, o wi'a: "Jotta kam, suy, jotta doo, sey on coodana yam soodi soodi'en. Ammaa meere non tum mi taalana on, mi taalana on doo, yahataa."

Suy, ban nii kadi, rew6e mbi'a: "Wayne soodana maa nyalaade. Nyalaade kazaa boo *tour wayne*." Nii. Be taala jemma. Ku66a yiite. Rew6e don motta nder saare, koo caka saare nii. Feere boo haa yaasi haa babal 6e mboowi joodaago tum ngam hiirgo nii.

Suy kadi, 6ooyma kam a yi'i, yiite boo sadi? Fittirla walaa. Lampu walaa. *Pétrole* walaa. A yi'i, sey yommbe hu66a nii. Jotta ban asiri ban nii doo nii, derke'en don moo6ta yommbe, moo6ta waaga waaga bee anniya haa babal man doo nii joorde joorde joorde.

Yowwaa, to jemma wadi kadi, 6e ku66a yiite. Naa 6e ngadi jayngol kadi? Doo kam 6e mottan. Mottando motta. Hannde, fursando fursa. Nyootando tummude fusnde don nyoota. Walaa no

walaa kadi. Koo moy fuu wadda kuugal mum nii, don wara huuwa haa ton. Be don ngeewta, 6e don taala nii. A yi'i, naa haa wakkati saala law haa saa'i nastugo wada? Nii, 6e ngafda taalol kam.

Taalol, beldum meere.

Jotta kam 6e taalan koo ndeye fuu. Koo taaloofe man maa duudaay. Ammaa 6e *respectataa* kadi, 6e dowlantaako, hannde, wakkatiije man, sey jemma, way, sey ceedu doo, walaa. Nde a yami goddo fuu, to o anndi kam o taalante. Ammaa kadi, sooynde man kam yimbe maajum waawbe dum doo, duudaay. A yi'i, ngam derke'en, jotta doo, cuklantaako kuuje ndotti'en doo. Haala wofbe, janngirde. Wofbe boo cuklani kuuje godde. Wofbe boo paalaa non, ndaari bana hunnde meere goo. Asee maa hunnde nafaore. Taalol kam naa nafan? Kanjum kadi waawbe man doo, duudaay. Be don kawta annditanamji bee taali fuu, 6e don mbi'a **mamba** non. Ammaa kadi, asngol man don feere feere.

Histoire kam **labara**. Dum kam habaru.

To **mamba** jur, **mamba** hay.

Gi mamba kam taalgo taalol. **E gi mamba le** kam ba wi'go mi taali taalol. **Gi mamba** kam taalanam.

Anndaado nii haa yimbe duufbe ngara haa maako, daayii6e daayii6e ngara ba Baaba Zandu⁷¹ doo, latti ba mallumjo man non doo, walaa. Haa amin kam 6urna fuu ndotti'en, fulberewbe, waawbe man don kadi. Goddo boo anndaa sam. Ammaa anndube man don.

(10/1/1993)

Fuddam taalol kam 6e don mbi'a: "**Mamba mamba. Kula⁷² a vij⁷³ but⁷⁴ vra⁷⁵ dee⁷⁶ asi⁷⁷ balak⁷⁸.**" Waatoo, ndaa taalol taalol, nasti nder suudu, wurti, joodi dow daŋki yehi joodi dow hunnduko beembal.

⁷¹ Geewtoowo haala gonnoodo haa Jaarengol Kodek. O donno haa duniya 1916-1977. O ekkitini *missionnaire*'en wofbe Fulfulde. O dali kiistaajl baakin 500. Innde Deftere kam Hammadu 6ii Aamadu. Innde daada boo Asta-Juma wi'ete.

⁷² **Kula** kam nasti.

⁷³ **Vij** kam suudu.

⁷⁴ **But** kam wurti.

⁷⁵ **Vra** kam yaasi.

⁷⁶ **Dee** kam dari.

⁷⁷ **Asi** kam haa les.

⁷⁸ **Balak** kam daŋki.

Timmingo taalol boo, fe don mbi'a: "**Kicikar**⁷⁹ babaraŋ culek." Waatoo, gertogal daneewal deydey nii. Mi anndaa ko wi'ete culek. Jemma tan fe taalata. Waawfe dum doon. **Mamba** doo bana kaayeeŋi, huunde haayfiniinde. Miin kam mi woowraay bee haala taalol. Sey baaba am taalanno. (4/3/1986)

104. Jiire woni yoyngel nder taali

Ayew, dum jiire bee Gizigaare. **Ayu hay**, dum ji'e. Yoyre kam sey jiire har amin kam. **Motkoyo**, dum fowru. **Motkoyo hay** kam pobbi. (10/1/1990)

105. "Sada-kusel bee bilkiijo"

Bilkiijo soobri bee sada-kusel⁸⁰.
Yowwaa, fe coobri. Sada-kusel goo wara tawa bilkiijo, wi'i yoo: "Sey en ngada gawa." Bilkiijo doo genndeeru.
Suy, sada-kusel wara hulna mo tum. To sada-kusel wari nii, nannga bilkiijo boo caka rewfe maako, eŋa mo, do" a mo.
Suy, o woya. Rewfe maako ngara kisna mo, ngara mbi'a sada-kusel: "Accu mo. Accu mo."
Suy, sada-kusel acca mo dilla. Don tokki non tum haa nyanndere feere, to sada-kusel huuci, o wi'ata rewfe maako: "Accee. Jotta kam to o wari kam sey mi bu'na mo. To o wari nii, mi bu'na mo nii, haa bernde moodon onon boo feewa." Ammaa to o laari sada-kusel don fuufa luwel maako, feetilew feetilew, o wara nii, o tefa nyukkugo o don diwna non. "Useni to o wari kam mbi'ee mo mi walaa don." Bilkiijo goo don dari. Genndeeru boo.
Suy, to sada-kusel yotti nii, "Toye bilkiijo?" "Bilkiijo kam walaa don. Bilkiijo dilli jahaangal." "Dilli jahaangal?" "Ooho."
Suy, sada-kusel lora bee fuufgo luwal maako, feetilew. Bilkiijo goo, kanko kam faandu non o fuufata, gwiit gwiit. Sada-kusel don yaha

⁷⁹ **Kicikar** kam gertogal.

⁸⁰ Sada-kusel kam **babbangorvek** wi'ete bee Gizigaare.

deydey laawol nii, nana ndaa faandu don fuufa. O laara. O annditi boo fakat dum faandu bilkiijo. O waran tum. Be mbi'a mo walaa don.

Nyanndere feere, o wari haa o dilla, o laari bilkiijo don waali 6aawo fayannde haa suudu. O wi'i mo: "Sey ngurtaa. Wurta ngaden ha6re." O fuddi wookgo kadi. "Useni, mi tuubi. Useni, mi tuubi." Rew6e maako boo don njala mo, don kuda mo: "Biira, bilkiwa. Kadi, sada-kusel nii nanngaa kanya, suy, ngel waata nii, a don tokki tuubango mo haa ndeye?" Dum don tokki, dum don tokki, dum don tokki haa nyannde feere, 6e kawri gawa kadi. Kawri gawa nii, sada-kusel goo yefti bilkiijo haa dow, weeltini mo haa dow. Biira, warti faddi mo haa lesdi, paa.

Suy, o don yama rew6e maako: "Naa mi maayi? Useni mi tuubi. Sada-kusel yoofa-mmi. Mi maayi, mi maayi."

Suy, 6ikkon, rew6eeji don njala mo nonnon.

Kanjum wi'ete habaru bilkiijo kadi.

Mbur mijinjigwid⁸¹ kam ba wi'go bilkiijo bee Gizigaare. **Darmay** boo asngol bilkiijo. **Darmay** 6uri **mbur mijinjigwid** bee bilkaare.

(4/3/1986)

106. "No yim6e ke6ri gawri"

Taalante no yim6e ke6ri gawri. No gawri wardi nder wuro. Haa ndotti'en taalata kam 6e mbi'i.

Gawri ndi min mari jotta doo, fowru marunoo ndi. Fowru yehi fe"i ngesa mum, he6i aawdi gawri, yehi fe"i ladde, mo"itini, wuli.

Suy kadi, iyeende arande yoofi.

Suy, ndu hooi aawdi gawri maako goo, dilli ladde. Ndu yehi aawi. Gawri fufi.

Yowwaa, ndu hooi baaneewo, yehi, remi ngesa, timmini ngesa bodeewal ⁸² kam la66ini tal. Hud'o warti. Demal dida6al kadi. Ndu hooi baaneewo kadiboo, yehi huuwi ngesa maaru, la66ini tal.

⁸¹ **Mijinjigwid** kam asngol sonndu. Dum sonndu misitiraaku. Dum joododoto nder sa66o wooto. Nanngugo dum hoyi. Ngam daliila man 6e mbi'a dum bilki-ijum.

⁸² Bodeewal, dum demal aranal.

Yowwaa, kadiboo, hufo warti. Demal tataɓal kadiboo. Ndu yehi ndu remti ngesa goo, laɓɓini.

Suy, gawri mawni. Gawri ɓenndi.

Yowwaa, a yi'i, ndi ɓenndi. Be mbi'i: "Naa saa'i sodgo wadi?" Fowru hooɓi wafdu, dilli ladde, fudɗi sodgo gawri, wadi tari.

Yowwaa, suy kadi, ndu tayi gawri goo, adi, yaari, waagi haa larre.

Yowwaa, suy, kadiboo, gawri fiyaay hoore maari. Fowru hooɓi sawru, yehi, fiyi gawri goo. O wi'i gawri: "Jaartu hoore maa kadi jotta kam. Mi somi miin kam." Gawri jaartaay hoore mum.

Suy, fowru hooɓi tummuɗe, jaarti gawri goo, laɓɓini tal.

Suy, fowru wi'i: "Jotta kam gawri, mi fiyi dagam aawre, haa mi aawi. Ndem-mi haa sodgo, haa adgo, haa fiygo fuu, haa jaartugo fuu, miin huuwi. Ammaa jotta kam ndaa koo ɗume fuu timmi. Jotta kam sey kuucaa nder wuro kadi. Adgo kam haa mi hoore wuro kam mi waawataa. To a huucaay haa nder wuro, miin boo mi ɗaɓe ɗoɗɗon."

Suy, gawri ɗon jiddi non, sali huucugo. Fowru goo wolwana gawri goo, wolwana gawri, wolwana gawri. Gawri sali huucugo. Ndi ɗon jiddi non.

Suy, ndu ɓerni, dilli, ɗali gawri goo.

Suy, godɗo wari tawi. Tawi gawri ɗon jiddi.

Suy, adgo non. Gawri kam njigaari. Adi yaari nder wuro.

Suy, nastini nder beembal, maatini yimɓe kadi. "Ndaa ko keɓ-mi. Ndaa no gawri waadi bee fowru. Yoo, enen keɓi riba gawri goo."

Suy, ɓe nastini gawri nder beembal. Gawri wartani yimɓe kadi.

Nii noo haa amin kam.

(27/1/1992)

107. "No kusel laatori kaaye"

Be mbi'i ɓooyma kaaye ɗe ngi'eten doo, fuu ɗum kusel non. Kusel, baagaaje kaaye ɗe ngi'ataa doo. Be hooɓa non, njaara, ndefa.

Suy, ɓe ɗon mbi'a, nde ɓe ɗon kusel doo: "Taa ngadee mannda, ndefree cukkuri nii. Mannda kam taa ngadee sam."

Suy, ɓe ɗon tokki wadgo nii non. Tokki tokki, suy, debbo feere nii, kanko wi'i waawataa wadgo cukkuri foroy. "Ndaa mannda, beldum nii, suy, wadtaa?"

Suy, kanko kam haa o ɓurra rewɓe wofɓe kadi. Ngilawaaku naa? Koo noy naa?

Suy, o hooei mannda goo. Kusel don defa, sammini dow kusel, hooei laawirgal haa yaha laanya nii goo, suy, kaaye korlolooy korlolooy korlolooy. "Hii, noy noy?" Kusel goo warti kaaye. Yehi yuppi tawi dum kaaye. Haa yaha hooea feere, tawa kusel goo boo, pat kaaye. Luttude yaasi goo boo fuu lattake kaaye non. Nii non kaaye ngarti.
(27/1/1992)

108. Dawaadi donno piya gawri

Be don mbi'a: "Booyma dawaadi don piya gawri, don ngima." Naa fe kudi rawaandu haa saare? Be mbi'i: "Aan kam walaa ko anndudaa sey nyaamgo non tan. Nde weeti a don juttini hunnduko, sey, a don reena nyaamdu. Walaa ngal kuuwataa sam. Ndaa jotta gawri fe ndemi, dume dume fuu don waagi haa ladde. Yah fiy lee, ngartiraa ndi saare. Min kebaay fiyoobe."

Suy, rawaandu ferni. Ndu dilli. Ndu yamoyi banndiiji'en. Ndu wi'i: "Naa ndaa ndaa ndaa ko jawmam wi'i? Ndaa no o hurri yam. Ammaa kadi useni, to on njaaban kam ngaree njehee pijen gawri."

Suy, di don ngima. Di don piya gawri goo. Tum tum tum .

Suy, fe don mbi'a:

"Kiri a dak daw kwa?

A dak ta mbri ya?

Kiri a dak daw kwa?

A dak daw lee gisiŋ kwa?

A dak ta mbri ya?" Don piya gawri goo. Ban nii haa di diggini gawri goo tilik. Di timmini.

Suy, di njaarti gawri goo.

Suy, di adi gawri goo, di ngartiri gawri goo saare.

Nii dawaadi boo piyanno gawri. Be mbi'i. Ammaa warti bana kaayeeŋi kadi. Rawaandu kam naa nanan? Wolwataa non. Ndu woodi hakkiilo nango ko fe mbi'ata fuu. **Kiri.**

Maana gimol kam:

"Rawaandu boo fiyan gawri naa?

Noye ndu fiyataa?

Rawaandu boo fiyan gawri naa?

Ndu fiyi bee goonga naa?

Noye ndu fiyataa?"

Ndotti'en ɓooyma'en taalani yam.

(27/1/1992)

109. "No rawaandu bee jiire ngaadi"

Rawaandu yami jiire. O wi'i jiire yoo: "Useni, to a don yaha ladde nii, mbi'aa-mi, njahden. Miin boo mi yaha mi joododo bee maa ton. Mi safti bone saare doo. Tum ɓe kufatam. Biira, rawaandu. Biira, nii nii. Biira, ndu huuwataa. Biira, ndu walaa nii. Mi safti bone duniyaaru doo. Miin kam mi nastan ladde, mi joodoto too. Mi suukoto. Njahaa nii, ngonden ladde." Jiire wi'ata mo: "A waawataa. Joodnde amin doo bone. Her min ngoni doo, bee dabareeji amin, min njoodori ladde doo. A waawataa joodnde ladde."

Suy, ndu wi'i: "To bone don nii, ɓaawo maa doo tekkanno ban nii naa? Baawo maa kusel corok doo nii. To a don bee bone haa ladde ton doo, ngo tekkanno bana nii naa? Biira, sinaa pewe?"

Yoo, jiire wi'i: "War kadi. Ndillen tokkam. Mi don dilla nii, tokkam. Njahren. Ammaa kadi sey maraa dabareeji. Aan boo." O wi'i: "Dabare kam naa doon? Sappo. Dabare am don sappo. Ko waawata hisnugo en kam don." "Yoo, nden kam en ndillu." Be don ndilla, ɓe don ndilla, ɓe don ndilla. Nasta nder doɗaare saalo dilla, nasta nder doɗaare saalo dilla, nasta nder doɗaare saalo dilla, haa ɓe nasti nder ladde caka cak.

Suy, ndaa fowru don waali, laari nii, suy, ummi dow rawaandu bee jiire goo.

Suy kadi, haala wadfi. Jiire wi'ata rawaandu: "Jotta doo sey ngadaa dabareeji di goo kadi. Ndaa jotta kam en kalki. Ndaa en potootiri bee fowru. Fowru doo accataa en. Nyaaman en boo fakat a anndi. Sey ngadanaa en dabareeji maadfa, mbi'daa sappo doo. Haa kisnaa en kadi. Sinaa non kam en kalki."

Rawaandu kam, suy, o wi'i: "Naa dabareeji lutti tati? Jeedifi kam fuu kalki. Tati tan lutti. E tati luttudi doo boo, di kisanataa en. Sey woygo, sey tallaago, sey saargo tan. Ammaa naa nafataa?" Ndu don wooka, ndu don tallo, ndu don saara non. Fowru wi'i law: "Dume waddi on? Mbi'ee law law. Miin kam goonga ngid-mi haa mon." Rawaandu koo dabare walaa.

Suy, jiire wi'i kadi: "Minin kam, barkaa maa, minin kam baaba amin maayi, dali boo kuuje tokke tokke tokke, wadtaako. Ndaa

tokke na'i, ndaa tokke baali, ndaa tokke walaa ko walaa. Bamde. Walaa ko walaa. Baaba amin kam. Ammaa miin bee rawaandu kam nde min famarɓe, ɓe mbi'i ɓe ndokkataa min. Nde ɓe ngari rongo doo, ɓe mbi'i minin kam ɓe pamɗinan gefal amin. Minin boo min mbi'i njaɓataa. Nden kam sey njaara wullaandu haa kaawu amin ladde, haa fowru wara hiitano en kiita man. Kanjum waddi min haa maa." "Yoo, jur naa? " "Jur." "Jur?" "Jur." "Yoo, boodɗum. To ɓe ngoni?" "Ndaa a don ewa dulleuru too doo, collaaje yummiide dow too doo, dum tokke na'i maajum njahata." "Yoo, boodɗum. Nden kam gooto mon yaha wi'a ɓe ngara law law." Naa suuno kadi?

Suy, jiire wi'ata rawaandu: "Doggu kadi yah mbi'aa ɓe tata mbi'aa en tawɓe kaawu fowru kam haa o hiitano en kiita ka. Ooho, jotta kam en ngadi saa'a. Minin boo gefal amin fotan bee ɓeya. Njahaa wi' ɓe law ɓe ngara law bee na'i doo, bee tokke bamde, tokke pucci, walaa ko walaa kadi." Biira, rawaandu kam fali wicco, don dogga, don dogga, don dogga, don dogga, walaa daraago nii, don dogga, don dogga, don dogga. Yehi haa yotti wuro, nasti saare jawmiiru. Nasti saare boo doggi waali haa ɓaawo payande.

Suy, waali ton kadi, meetaay wurtaago. Be don ndeena, ɓe don ndeena, ɓe don ndeena, ɓe don ndeena, fowru bee jiire goo. "Kadi, a wi'i boo ɓe don ngara. No wadi haa jotta ɓe njottaaki?" O wi'i: "A'aa, naa ɓe don ngara? Ammaa naa rawaandu boo ndu bilkiiru meere? Anndaa nelal. Be neli ndu doo, ndu huuwantaa yimɓe nelɓe haaje. To miin yehino kam haroore ɓe ngarino ɓooyma. Kadi, daga naane nii, haa jotta ɓe njottaaki. O yottinaay nelal bee laawol. Sey mi yaha." "Nden kam yah lee law."

Yoo, jiire kam keret keret keret keret, senndiri bee fowru nii, tawi waande, suy, sorki nder ton kadi.

Takalamulus.

Suy, rawaandu wi'i kadi naa jiire semtini ndu? Jotta doo to ndu yi'i jiire nii, suy, narrataa sey to mbari. Kanjum. Asee maa jiire hisni ndu. Kanjum wadi jiire bee rawaandu narrataa haa hannde. Ngam ndu semti yeeso jiire. Ndu saari, woyi, talli fuu.

(27/1/1992)

110. **Mi ngu hur mi**

Balndol kam don jur. **Mi ngu hur mi** malla **mi ngu kocay**⁸³
kam wolde nder wolde. **Mi** kam hunnduko, malla wolde.
(10/1/1990)

111. Annditanamwol

Annditanamji⁸⁴ doo, koo don boo miin kam mi anndaa haala man
kadi.
(10/1/1990)

Sey rewɓe, sey wofɓe annduɓe haala man. Koo mi waawataa.
(7/2/1992)

XII. ALLA BEE SAYDAAN

112. **Biy mulvuŋ**

Biy mulvuŋ, dum innde Alla tan. Woodaa maana feere. **Biy** kam
ba wi'go **buy**, laamɗo. **Mulvuŋ** kam ba wi'go asama.
(27/1/1992)

113. Alla tagi asama bee lesdi

Kamɓe kam ɓe mbi'a Alla nii tagi asama bee lesdi. Be anndi Alla
don. Nde ɓe ndewaay mo nii, ɓe don ngadɗa al'aadaaji maɓɓe doo, to
kuli maɓɓe ɓe ngadɗa maa, ɓe aartira innde Alla tawon. Be mbi'a:
"Alla mawɗo, gonɗo haa asama. Ndaa min ngadan nii bee nii."

Suy kadi, to ɓe ewni innde Alla, nii, ɓe acca don kadi. Be ewna
innde alla labbi maɓɓe doo. Labbi kazaa. Lawru kazaa. Lawru
kazaa. Haa ɓe timmina ɓe ngudina Alla kam sera non kadi.
(27/1/1992)

⁸³ **Kocay** kam reedu.

⁸⁴ Annditanam kam **sini god**.

114. Pendo wurtaago her duniya

Be mbi'a godfo gooto latti ban nii. Mi anndaa innde maako. Gorko bee debbo kadi. Be anndaa asliiji duudfi. Ammaa 6e anndi kam **Babaraŋ** doon, **Gagazaŋ** doon. **Tətəraŋ** doon. Ammaa gal maɓɓe kam, 6ii-Aadamaajo kam fuu **mbur tətəraŋ** kadi. Godfo ɓaleejo non, 6e mbi'ata. Koo aan a latti a nasaara, aan kam ɓaleejo non, to 6e ngidi wi'go. Nefdo kam **mbur tətəraŋ** non.

Alla wannini 6e non. Be anndaa haa toy 6e mbanngi.

(27/1/1992)

115. Koroleme

Koroleme, kosngal gootal, junngo wooto, yitere woore, hinere woore. Innde kuuje pat, gootel gootel kadi. Anndaa hoore kam kadi. Nii non nii, non 6e mbi'ata dum. Don hooseere.

Dum wanngataa, sey jemma jemma. Jemma kam to a fotootiri bee man doo, woodaay sam. Mbaran godfo maa. Waanca caka cak jemma.

(6/1/1992)

116. Setene

Setene, dum ginnawol. **Setene** kam Seydan fakat kadi. **Setene** kam yi'ataake tum kam kadi. Sinaa mo wannani dum kadi. Wannataa boo sey caka cak naange. Haa caka cak ladde, her yim6e ngoodaa. To godfo don yiilo caka naange, 6e don koolana dum kadi. "Taa yiila caka naange kam. Taa yah ladde feere maa. Ngam a fotootiran bee **Setene**." To fotootiri bee **Setene** kam o nasti maa timmi kadi. O huuwete kuude kallufe. Nii 6e mbi'ata.

Yoo, haa ndotti'en kadi, to 6e kefi, 6e ndaari ban nii doo, godfo laari warta wuro wi'a: "Miin kam woodi ko ngi'-mi haa ladde." Be mbi'a mo: "Noy noy ndaardudaa dum?" O wi'a: "Mi yehi haa pellen waanciyel nii, taw-mi ɓinngel keccel, pamarel nii nii, don waanca, don waanca, don waanca. Suy, nde yi'i yam nii, doggi nasti nder waande. Malla boo saayi nii non. Meetaay yi'go mo. Ammaa mi gi'do fakat."

Feere boo wolwanan goddo. Feere boo, to yi'i goddo, suy, ngel saaya nii non. A yi'ataa fahin. Doo kam a fotootiri bee **Setene**. Kanjum wi'ete Saydan.

(6/1/1992)

117. Ginnaaji

Ginnaaji don jur haa Giziga'en kadi. Setene don wannga bana mi wi'ino ma bee sanndu bana sanningel keccel. Feere boo, dum huunde non non, ndabbaawa nii, bana koo nagge, feere mbaala, a tawan. Ammaa naa mbaala nanndunga bee baali yimbe mari doo. Ginnawol man hooci waylita mbaalu, feere boo nagge. Feere boo ndabbaawa feere non.

Laamiingol maajum kam **Maliyam**. **Maliyam** don jalbita. Burna kam haa ndiyam **Maliyam** kam joodoto. Dum inde ginnawol man. Dum gorko.

Wonan gorko don, debbo don fuu. Binngel don. Ba yimbe non kadi.

Ginnawol don haa ladde. Saare kam naa pella man don? Feere, wuumre wonnde nii. Kada yimbe yahgo ton. Haa ton ginnaaji njoodoto.

Feere boo haa nder kaaye.

Yoo, ton be mbi'ata joonnde ginnaaji. Feere boo haa ladde. Haa donjaaje ban booyma, donjaaje donno jur jur doo. Haa nder donjaaje ladde doo, ton ginnaaji don ngonata.

Feere boo nder lekki loogo. Setene nasta ton. Ban kojoli feere to wafi loogo doo, ton to **Setene** wanngi, goddo laari wara nasta haa loogo doo. Feere boo nder waande.

Mo waawata woldidgo bee Setene kam sey mawbe man, annuube haala dabi'aaji man kadi. Booyma'en kadi. Jotta kam toye kadi? Yimbe maa ngidaa nango haala man nii. Minin derke'en doo kam min nuddintaa kam haa sam nii. Min don ndaara bana fewre meere. Ammaa dum don.

(6/1/1992)

118. Masahay

Masahay don koo toye. Don Marwa doo don. Mal Giziga'en non.

Kambe kam gertoode nii. Be kirsa. Malla boo kudol, kannjol doo nii. Be ngewa nii, be cakkina, be ndaara. Wolwa wolwa wolwa, suy, sakkina. Kambe be anndi.

Koo to goddo wurto dilla jahaangal maa, to hirsaa yertogal maa, sey, hooa ngel doo laara. To laari nii, suy, sakkina. O wi'i: "Kaay, jahaangol am ngal woodataa. Mi laari mi sakkini kannjol doo, waalaaki bana bernde yidi. Doo kam hersum. Mi heban fotootira bee hersum malla asar. Ndikka mi faasita ngal." O faasita kadi. O hoora jahaangal man haa nyalde wonnde feere.

(6/1/1992)

119. Hurgugo yinnaabe

Doo kam naa kuugal **masahay**? Kuugal maako kam aynugo lesdi, mo"itingo lesdi, mo"itingo joodnde yimbe. Nii, kuugal maako.

Hurgoobe yinnaabe don boo sey anndube kuugal ginnaaji man, be ginnaaji hokki be anndal man. Kambe be kuuwata dum kadi. Mi anndaa no be kuuwrata. Woodi puufoowo luwal, geegoowo googeeru, puufoowo faandu. To be don puufa paali doo, be mbi'a *musique non. Vala*. Zhuzhuzhuzhuzhu. Be puufa ban nii.

Suy, bikkon don tappa ledde. Be don koola.

Suy, be don mbi'a: "Ginnaaji ngurti." Debbo man yumma.

Suy, be ewna innde man kadi. "Miin kam ginnawol kazaa."

(25/2/1992)

120. Mistiriijo

Mistiri kam a yi'i, **misi**⁸⁵ **tir**⁸⁶ doo, gayloowo. **Mijuuri** kam nyaaman non, nyaaman mbeelu. Nyaama, suy, binngel maaya, malla, goddo maaya. Nyaamanaado mbeelu kam maayan. **Misi kleŋ** doo o nyaamataa, o laaran haa daaydum. To o wanyi maa o hoocan mbeelu maa haa ego.

Jemma kam **masahay** don ayna. Ban booyma haa Godola doo, woodi Bappa **Biy muc** wadata kuli maŋbe haa saare bonngo doo.

⁸⁵ **Misi** kam mo.

⁸⁶ **Tir** kam waylitaago.

Kanko kam o aynan. O anndi saare wayne doo, debbo maako mistiriijo. Yiite debbo o anndi. Yiite gorko, o anndi. Fuu.

O wurto nii, o joodo haa les danƙi don nii. Jemma to yimɓe nasti, o wurto o joodo, o ayna wuro. O ayna, o ayna nii. Jemma colli man ngurtan. Be mbi'i colli man jamum, don jur. Mufu'en gal lesdi Meri too doo doo, don ngarta gal doo jamum. Be don nastindira bee Giziga'en doo, ɓurna maɓɓe fuu mistiri'en.

Suy, haa maako saa'i o donno doo, to yiite nasti haa saare maako, o wi'a: "Ndaa debbo maa. Yiite nasti haa saare maa nyalde kazaa. Debbo maa mistiriijo." Waabataa kadi. Kanko kam o anndi kuugal maajum fuu maa. O moɓta ɓe pat. To moɓti ɓe o wi'a: "Wayne bee wayne bee wayne, onon halluɓe. On waaboto naa?" Mistiriijo fuu waabataako.

Yoo, o barra ɓe kadi. To o barri ɓe, accaay, o wurtina ɓe lesdi maɓɓe. O riiwa ɓe. Barrugo man boo, ban mangariba ban nii doo, o wa" a dow danƙi maako ban nii, suy, o wolwa kadi. O yeeyna. "Nanee, nanee. Mi anndi on. Mi anndi on. Tata mbi'ee mi anndaa on. Haa lesdi ndi kam walaa nii godɗo wi'ata nii, mi anndaa kuugal maako. Mistiriijo maa, mi anndi mo. Godɗo, hannde, boodɗo nonnon, gondo nder wuro doo, mi anndi mo on ndadataa kam. Ammaa kuugal ngal ngadton doo, accee. To on ndaayaaki kuugal maajum, mi tammi wi'go wayne, wayne, wayne. Mi ewna on, mi hawta on. Nyannde to mi hawti on, on keftataa hoore mon." Nii. Wodɓe acca wurtingo yiite. To ɓe tawi wadtaako, ɓe egga, ɓe ndilla ego. Nii, o aynirta lesdi maako, kanko kam ɓooyma.

To haala mistiraaku wuli jaw doo, naa ɓe kunan? To godɗo waabake, ɓe kunan. Koo moye saare fuu wurtina gertogal mum, hirsaa. To hirsaa gertogal, laɓɓini mo, doo kam to godɗo nyawi, wari maaygo dey, o barri, o barri, ɓe njoofaay.

Suy, o moɓta wuro pat, moy fuu wadda gertogal maako. "Nyalaade waanciire en ngurtodo ɓaawo kowaagol." Naa babal man don? Be kawta ton. Moy fuu bee gertogal mum haa junngo. Koo moye hirsaa. "To mi mistiriijo, gertogal am, hollu. Tonaa mi mistiriijo boo, laɓɓinam." Be kirsaa. Mo lattaaki mistiriijo boo gertogal holla kadi o naa mistiriijo. To mistiriijo boo, gertogal sappina o mistiriijo. Feere, o wi'a: "Yah nanngu kadiboo, gertogal godngal. Naaloore don dow maa ngam maajum, gertogal holli a mistiriijo. Kirsaa kadiboo. Laɓɓinaa hoore maagal naaloore doo." Hirsaa. To laɓɓini gal naaloore, o hirsaa kadiboo, sappini mistiriijo. Nden, ɓe kiito mo kadi. Nii.

Be ngadda ndotti'en ɓooyma. Be njoɓna mo. Jur maa. Feere kam, tokka tokka haa o timmina. "Waaye, ngam kuli maako yahaaya laawol." Doo boo hirsaa o yaha, o uwa kuugal kuli maako man laɓɓina, wara fuddita kadiboo. Be accataa bee koydum ban nii. Nii doo, ɓe kulan nyaamgo ɓooyma kam. Be pijataa nyaamgo meere meere.

Ammaa jotta doo, naa walaa fuu sottake? A haadani godɗo mistiraaku maa, o yaha wulli haa bureau. "Koni wayne ewni yam mistiriijo?" Kiita Nasaara'en kadi. "Wayne haadi yam mistiraaku," o wi'ata.

Suy, o ewne kadi. "No anndirdaa o nyaaman? No anndirdaa o wadi nii?" Be ndile kadi. A yi'i kanjum wonni joodnde yimɓe jonta jonta doo?

Ammaa ɓooyma haa ndotti'en kam ɓe accataa dum bee koydum ban nii. Be don ayna. Be don kulna boo huuwoobe kuude maajum. Naa nii?

(25/2/1992)

121. Nyaamooɓe yimɓe

Mannjemannje, ɓe don mbi'a woodi nyaamooɓe yimɓe kam gal ton. Teema dow maɓɓe ɓe mbi'ata kadi. **Muzuma muzlay.** Nyaamooɓe yimɓe. Nyaamgo kam **zum.** Yimɓe boo **muzlay.** Nii ɓe mbi'ata. Koo naa goonga boo. A yi'i, naa yimɓe ngaddan haala non tan. Yimɓe njogoo nuddina ka. Ammaa aa wi'ataake nii ɓe fuu ɓe nyaaman kam. Koo to wofɓe nyaaman boo, mi anndaa kadi?

(7/2/1992)

XIII. WAMMBAABE BEE FIJIRDE

122. Bammbaado

Bammbaado rookan, fiyan **cawal.** To don fiya, yimɓe don ngama. Bammbaado kam haa Giziga'en kam walla yannde juulde, walla, nyalde sadaka, walla boo, sadaka maayɗo. Nii bee sukaaɓe maako. Be ngima. **Cawal** ɓe piya. Walaa bammbaado feere, sey **cawal** haa doo kam. Be piya ɓe ngama. Be mbaala wamgo, ɓe nyalla wamgo,

Ɔe mbaala wamgo. To juulde kam haa nyalde baakin jeefidi. Be ngaman ba Ɔooyma kam.

Don nyaama kusel non tan, njara mbal. Walaa kuugal. Walaa goddo yahata kuugal.

Bawdi kam naa koo moye fuu. Mardo mbaggu kam sey piyoowo mbaggu nii. Bammbaado ban FulƆe non nii.

(25/2/1992)

123. Cawal

Cawal kam Ɔe ngurtinan saa'i wamirde. Juulde kam fuu. Juulde sadaka, juulde al'aada nonnon. Koo dum juulde lebbi sappo e didi. To Ɔe ngaman kam, Ɔe ngurtinan kadi. Koo dum sadaka maaydo, to Ɔe ngadi sadaka timmi, Ɔe ndefi mbal'en, njara goo, nyannde man, Ɔe ngaman.

WammbaafƆe **cawal** don. Be mbi'ete **məhərək hay**⁸⁷ **məzli dimis**. Waato, rookoofƆe yimooƆe kadi.

(23/1/1992)

124. Ndaraawu

Ndaraawu har amin kam Ɔe pijataa meere meere. Ban juulde kam Ɔe pijataa bee ndaraawu. Sinaa sadaka goddo mawdo baaba-saareejo jottiido. Be ndarna ndaraawu Ɔe pija. Doo kam sey **masahay** marata dum. Be njo"intaa haa goddo haa amin kam. Masahay man boo, jotta kam o maayi.

(25/2/1992)

Ndaraawu har amin kam sey **masahay**. Sey goddo mawdo wuro aynata dum. Mi andaa jotta kam. Booyma kam don haa Moogazaŋ. Jotta kam kuuje fuu don kalka?

Ndaraawu kam kuugal mum Ɔe pijataa bee man meere meere. Sey to bana goddo mawdo maayi. Mawdo lesdi. Bana misaalu, wadoofƆe al'aada lesdi doo. Jawro naa meere?

⁸⁷ **Hərək** kam rookaago.

Yoo, mawbe mawbe mawbe, hannde, be darjifinaabe wuro kadi. Kambe kadi, to maayi, be ndarna ndaraawu kadi, be piya. Haa asngol fuu naa woodi mawbe maβbe?

Piyoowo man don. Naa koo moye fiyata. Anndufe waawbe man naa don? **Masahay** kam aynan non. Bammaado gal wakeere waade kadi. A yi'i, bammaado wakeere waade naa don? Piyoowo ndaraawu walaa innde *spécial*. Ammaa waawbe non kadi. Bana wayne bee wayne. Koo haa wuro feere boo, be njaha, be ewna kadi. O wara.

Badak bee Gizigaare. Ndaraawu don juuti. Goddo daro dow unordu, fiya dum. Don juuti, mbaggu man. Be nyoota gal dow non tan gootel. Doo boo bee kosfe tati. Endi ngalaa.

(22/2/1993)

125. Tonteere

Tonteere boo, doo kam ban masalan, mbaggu doo anndudaa doo nii. Ammaa mannga, don loori. Don nyoota gal doo bee gal doo fuu kadi.

Yoo, tonteere doo, wakeere be tappata doo, don yaaaji.

Yoo, gal doo boo don sewi seɗɗa. Tappoowo kam sey **masahay**. To fiyi, anndi woodi ko wadi. Walla habaruwol feere wadi, walla, konu wadi, walla ɗume. Dum maatina kadi. To be maatini be piyi doo, be anndi fakat woodi ko wadi. Sukaabe pat yummo bee bahi muudum'en bee kuuje konu maβbe.

Nden, be mbi'a be woodi hunnde wadi kazaa gal pallel kazaa. Sey yahgo tan. Humpitoya njaha bee anniya kadi. To wuybe maa, be taasna be bee anniya. To konu non wari boo, be taasko ngam yahgo fotta bee maβbe kadi, be kaβa. Kanjum boo be piyataa meere meere.

Tonteere don gal Godola. Mawɗo gadoowo lawru kam don haa ton haa lesdi Marwa doo. Bappa **Biy muc** on. Ammaa o maayi.

(22/2/1993)

126. Bawɗi

Ndotti'en ɓooyma koo moye fuu huuwanan hoore maako. Mo anndaa boo yaarana annduco kadi, wafana mo, hoppana mo,

mo" inana mo digga tilis.

Yowwaa, suy, borno kadi. Mbaggu boo **ganjan** wi'ete.

(25/2/1992)

Mbaggu kam koo moy fuu maran kadi. Ammaa anndudo bana bammaado. Haa amin kam bammaado mbaggu duudaa. Bawdi boo sey ko laarani juulde, surga. Surga to wadi, 6e piya. Doo boo nii. Ammaa naa wakka, yaha yolnde, fiya, rooko.

Surga, 6e njaha 6e ndema ngesa. Be nyalla remgo. Feere boo, to juulde wadi, 6e don ngama, 6e don piya bawdi. Doo boo nii. Tan kuugal bawdi haa amin.

(22/2/1993)

127. Ganjavar

Har Giziga'en kam **ganjavar** walaa. Doo kam naa kuuje Mufu'en? Moolooru walaa. Minin kam sey **cawal** bee googeeru. Waatoo, **kaaku**.

(25/2/1992)

128. Googeeru

Anndudo haala man wadan. Ammaa donno bee man 6ooyma. Bee mbaggu fuu. Ammaa naa ngam haa rooko kam. Haa fija haa saare. Fija haa derke'en boo ngara, ngama. Kadi wakkati don saalo, bana jemma'en. To 6e cafti kuude, 6e ngada.

(22/2/1993)

129. Luwe

Luwe⁸⁸ don. Fuufataa meere. Sey to diiwgal wadi. Sey to godfo maayi. Doo boo nii, haala luwal boo.

(22/2/1993)

⁸⁸ Luwal manngal kam **tulum** wi'ete. Luwal pamaral boo **fogom** wi'ete.

130. Liikodaaru

Naa 6e don puufa? Doo kam derke'en waynaa6e puufa. Luwal bee yommbal⁸⁹ man don. Be puufa 6e ndogga. To 6e ndaari hiiri, derke'en sukaa6e puufa kadi luwal man. Doo boo 6e ada gawri. Be ndogga. Jotta nii 6e njehi 6e lori. Be don puufa doo, 6e don njoka kadi. Njokiire, yahgo law law law kadi. Law nii 6e timmini kuugal.

Yim6e baakin dido tato puufa kadi. Oo boo fuufa kalite feere, oo boo wada feere hawta kam welii.

(22/2/1993)

131. Tummude bee zantuuru

Tummude⁹⁰ kam naa sey to bana lewru moji'en. Be ngadta ba mbi'no-maa-mi goo.

Jotta jotta, faandu wanngi. Faandu fijirde kadi.

Zantuuru kam don. **Jemtewe**. Baaba'en nguji kadiboo. Ammaa 6e pijataa ba 6ooyma. To rew6e njoodake don pija, a saftataa nango. Be ngima. Be ngimda ban sukaa6e haa wuro man doo. A saftataa nango. Ammaa fuu dum don waata kadi. Waati maa kadi.

To 6e 6aŋi kesum nder fattude, 6e ewna rew6e waaw6e fiygo zantuuru doo, ngara njoodo, don pija, don ngima. Wod6e don pija, ndufa ndiyam'en, nannga suka, sakkina, talla nder ndoondi. A don joodi ban nii. Biira, ndiyam peewdam, 6e ngara 6e ndufane puu. Yumma hayahaya, aan boo, taasna debbo man doo, mo wari rufani maa ndiyam doo. Yaha nannga do" a mo. Rew6e ngara ukka dow maa. Be cakkina maa. Be mborge. Be ngadda ndiyam 6e ndufa dow maa.

Nden, 6e ngadda ndoondi doo. Be ndufa dow maa, haa purdaa tal. Wor6e bee rew6e pat kadi. Warta ba ha6re goo. Ha6re fijirde haa modda. Wod6e kam haa ndotti'en nasta ka: "Accee. Jotta kam he'i non. Tata dum waddanam sababu." Haya haya. Booyma kam ban nii. Beldum meere. Ammaa 6e acci. Miin maa mi wadi? Naa kanjum wi'ete soro maajum? Be don pija ngam fijirde 6aŋngal non tan. Wod6e kam haa ndotti'en nasta fijirde man. Beldum meere.

⁸⁹ Liikodaaru kam **fogom nga angof** wi'ete. **Angof** boo yommbal.

⁹⁰ Tummude kam **vala** wi'ete.

Jotta kam, koo. Jurumdum. Jotta kam min don njoodani kuuje
Nasaara non kadi. Goonga kam, mi walli majjingo al'aada 6ooyma.
(25/2/1992)

XIV. INNDEERI, BAᅀNGAL BEE MAYIITI

132. Siwtu6e

Ko 6e mbi'ata kam, ciwtukon kam 6e nganyan. Be maraay haaje.
Be kulan kon maa kadi. To kon mbanngi yeeso maa, didon, cee,
ngurta boo didi, ko woowa boo gootel gootel bikkon kam ngardata.
Ammaa kankon kam kon ngardi kon didon. A yi'i naa kulniidum
sedda, kaayefijum sedda?

Yoo, sey kam6e kam 6e don kula kon. Be don ndaara bana bikkon
maajum doo, woodi anndal godngal feere. Kon latti bikkon feerehon
nanndaay bee godkon feere. To kon bernani daada, malla, baaba,
malla, adda, malla, hamma, malla minyiraawo, suy, malla nyawu
ngonngu nannga 6e kadi. Ammaa burna haa amin kam nanngan
gite. Nyawu gite. To kon berni nii, baaba nyawan nyawu gite, malla,
adda, malla, minyiraawo.

Yowwaa, nii. Nyawu gite. Siwtu6e kam **muusa hay**. Gooto boo
muusa. Debbo, gorko fuu fotan.

Mi jokkaaki kam. Haa asli godfi kam 6e nganyan 6e, 6e njaaran
6e, 6e cakkinan.

To siwtukon ndanyaama, 6e don ngadana kon al'aada. Nyannde
6e 6oftata daabe siwtu6e. **A h6laka zay**⁹¹ **muusa hay**. Anndaa
nyalde noy. Ammaa, 6e 6ofta daabe, 6e ngada al'aada jamum.
Burataa asaweere, asaweje didi.

Yowwaa, nden, nyannde man kadi, 6e ndefa mbal. Asli daada
moofa wara, asli baaba moofa wara.

Yowwaa, 6e nama kuroori'en. Be ngadda.

Yowwaa, nyannde 6e don ngada al'aada man, 6e ngurta yaasi pat.
Be ndara haa yolnde. Be kooca rew6e gal asngol daada, debbo
gooto. Gal asngol baaba, debbo gooto.

Yowwaa, 6e mbi'a oo dogga gal wakeere nyaamo, oo boo dogga gal
wakeere nano. Dogga kadi 6e taara saare. Haa 6e ndaara moy

⁹¹ **A h6laka** kam 6e 6ofti. **Hal** kam 6oftugo. **Zay** kam bu'e.

aartata yottaago haa yolnde nasta saare. Warta ba haŋre goo. To asngol debbo doo aarta nasta doo, yimŋe doo yumma kaŋa. "Noy? Debbo ŋura gorko naa?"

Suy, ŋe lorna mo. Be mbi'a: "To asngol debbo aarti nasti saare doo, naa o jaŋti saare? Kanko marata saare. Kanko marata iiko haa saare. Baawde pat nder saare kanko marata. Dum woodaay. Haa fotta kam asngol gorko aarta yottaago haa yolnde, nasta saare kadi. Doo kam haala duudataa. Ammaa to asngol debbo aarti asngol gorko yottaago haa yolnde, nasti saare, fottantaa asngol gorko kam jamum. Waddan haala."

Suy, ŋe ngadana kon ba fijirde goo, suy, ŋe ngadana kon al'aada kadi. Limce, sey didi didi. Pade ko ŋe coodana ngela, ngela boo sey non non. Tinaa non, ngel ŋernan. To fotaay kal kal doo, ŋe mbi'a, ngel ŋernan, ngel loroto huucan. Binngel maaya kadi. Nii, kulol man don har maŋŋe kam.

Yowwaa, kuuje maŋŋe fuu, didi didi didi. Mbiriwu maa to a yidi hokkugo gooto maŋŋe, sey a sennda didi, to a heŋaay feere. Taa jee gooto ŋura jee gooto woodgo. Haa kon mawna.

Kuli siwtuŋe don. Be kirsa ŋe ngada kuli maajum. Laati bana kuli kadi. Warti laawol nyaami nyaru kadi. Be keŋi daliila. Nyaami yaru bee maajum.

(25/1/1992)

133. Jippa-daraayel

To kosŋe arti wurti daada don danya doo, ŋe mbi'i jippa-daraayel. Bee Gizigaare boo, **mudisal**⁹².

(25/1/1992)

134. Binngel ngel koltoŋel

Binngel ngel hallere woore woodaay sam. Hallere woore kam koltoŋel wi'ete bee Fulfulde. To ŋe ndaari ŋe ndanyi ŋinngel, ŋe tawi, hannde ŋe meemi, hallere woore, kangel boo ŋe ndokka Fulŋe. Be ngidaa. Be mawnina.

⁹² **Mudisal** kam ba wi'go o wurti bee kosngal. **Sal** kam kosngal.

Malla boo, to 6e ngidaa hokkugo Ful6e. Wod6e kam don ndokka njaara haa asngol daada. Yaha haa kaawu'en maako, mawna ton.

Feere maa to duuri, nde warta. Feere boo wartataa kadi, don daggi non, woore non. Woore kam woodaay haa al'aada Giziga'en kam.

Naa walaa ko wadta? Ammaa naa kulan? Be mbi'an dabi'a kam koo moye didi didi, kanko kam sey gootel non doo, naa woodi nii ko o mari feere?

(23/2/1992)

135. Binngel gurtiingel bee nyii'e dow

Be ndanyi ngel. Ngel aartiri wadgo nyii'e gal dow. Doo kam har Giziga'en kam 6e ngidaa. Ba 6ooyma kam 6e ndokka Ful6e. Ful6e mawnina.

Yoo, Ful6e hannde 6e ke6ataa 6ikkon'en, dume dume goo, 6e kooa, 6e ndokka 6e, caaha 6e. Be mawnina kadi ngam haala nyii'e aarti gal dow doo. Haa al'aada ma66e 6e ngidaa. Woodaay.

Wod6e boo don bee dabare man don. To 6e don ayni 6inngel, 6e pudci wadgo nyii'e gal dow, woodi hayre feere nii 6e tokka yiggugo tum nii, anndaa to nde didi haa nyalaade, to nde woore, mi anndaa. Ammaa hayre man don kadi. Jawmu hunnde man, annduco haala man wadta dum. Doo kam laaranaay **masahay**.

O don tokki yiggango 6inngel doo haa haa haa haa nyii'e goo acca fudgo. Haa de les mbannga aarta dow wanngugo. To 6e ndaari nyii'e lesje mbanngi, suy, kadi, 6e acca yiggugo. Koo de dow pudci boo kal kadi.

Jotta boo don. Ammaa 6e teddinaay ka jamum ba 6ooyma kam.

(23/2/1992)

136. Cinndo

Cinndo'en⁹³ doo, doo kam mi anndaa. Cinndo'en kam 6e cakkintaa. Be ka66a jee peetel man doo bee gaaraaji haa dum sola.

(23/2/1992)

⁹³ **Muzumhay merked** kam ba wi'go cinndo.

137. Inndeeri

Be ngidi bikkon. Be ndanyan nii. Be don besda le'i godfi. Kambe boo be don ndanya.

To be ndanyi naa? Woodi al'aadaaji be ngadta. Ko laarani binnel danyaangel keccel.

Yoo, daada danyi binnel, binnel wurtataa yaasi. Be don ndeena nii, Haa to nyalde joweedidi wadi. Nyalde joweedidi to wadi, be ngara, be cooda gertogal agogumri kaadamri. Be ngadda ko nanndi ban nanngarde nii, be tigga haa dammugal suudu her binnel woni.

Yowwaa, nyannde jeedifaɓre doo, be kirsaa kadi agogumri kaadamri fajiri. Hiddeko be kirsaa doo, be don deeda haa hunduko doo, nii. Be kirsataa nii haa daande doo. To yiyam wanngi nii, be ngadda yiyam kadi haa dammugal suudu her be tiggi nanngargel goo. Kooa njaareendi kesri bana nii, loowa ton, jo"ina.

Suy, be cimta yiyam.

Kuli ko laarani binnel keccel.

To cimtini yiyam goo dow nanngargel goo, payangel goo, suy, be ngara be kirsaa kadi. Hirsugo jee goonga man. To be kirsi, be bora liliiji man. Be disa haa payangel goo, haa taara payangel goo. Liliiji man don ton.

Yowwaa, nden kadiboo, be nasta haa binnel. Be ngurtina ngel. Be laɓa ngel hoore. Be ndokka ngel innde.

Feere, goggo laɓata hoore. Feere boo, bappaanyo. Be mbi'a: "Ndaa binnel ngel kam nii innde maagel." Be ngurtina ngel yaasi kadi. Al'aada wadi. Nasti caka yimbe.

Mi anndaa ko be ngadata bee gaasa ka binnel wurtodi bee maaka diga reedu daada.

Dokkoowo innde kam, feere, gal baaba bee hoore mum. Feere boo, to maama don, maama hokkan. Maama gorko. Maama debbo gal wakeere gorko kadi hokkan innde.

Yowwaa, to hokki innde, innde maajum laatoto innde binnel.

(25/1/1992)

Min don ngada inndeeri bee agogumri, kaadamri. Be kirsaa. Kaadamri kam don wooji coy coy.

Yoo, nyannde jeedifaɓre, be kirsaa be ngadda payangel nii. Payangel man doo, ban haa dammugal maada, nanngarde. Be ngadda, be cumpita gal les. To be cumpiti gal les doo, daande man doo, be kippa nii, suy, be kooa njaareendi ban nii, be kebbina

nanngarde man goo. To ɓe kebbini, ɓe kirsaa kaadamri goo, ɓe ngada yiyam nii, ɓe mbicca yiyam dow naɗarde goo. To ɓe mbicci, yowwaa, suy kadi, ɓe ngurtina ɓinngel, ɓe ndokka innde kadi. Nii ɓe ngadta.

Ammaa ɓe kirsataa nagge, ɓe kirsataa mbeewa, ɓe kirsataa njawdiri nii kam. Sey kaadamri.

Debbo, gorko fuu, sey kaadamri.

Feere, baaba inndata. Goddo boo, malla yaapenndo, malla goggo, malla bappaanyo.

(10/1/1990)

138. Inde Giziga'en

Maana don nder innde man. A heɓtan maana. Misaalu: **Kitikil**, dum jiddere. Tokkiingel maaykon dum **Kitikil** wi'ete. Ngel boo gudinteengel dow jiddere non. Maayan non ɓe njaaran ngel bana kona goo boo fahin. Kangel ngel boo tammi maaygo. ɓe ndokka ngel innde **Kitikil**. A yi'i, Alla boo don jaabanoo ɓe? Feere ɓinngel maajum maayataa kadi, lutta. Suy, innde lutta **Kitikil**.

Gorgel danyaangel ɓaawo ɓikkon maaykon boo **Adubay**⁹⁴ wi'ete.

(25/1/1992)

Azumakay boo innde⁹⁵. Dum kam ba wi'go ɓe nyaami yam. **Zum** kam nyaamgo. **Kay** kam yam kadi.

(22/2/1993)

Haa amin kam walaa nii bee nii kam. Innde afo, haa amin kam walaa. ɓe ndokkan non innde kam.

ɓe ndokkan, hannde, to woodi ko wafi maa hitaande inndana ɓinngel man bee *accident* man. To woodi seyo keɓɗaa, bee man. To bone, bee innde man kadi.

Mi meedaay nango ɓe ewniri ɓinngel bee hitaande weelo kam. Weelo mal jokkaaki yam kadi. Inde weelo feere feere don. Mi don nana non. **May** doo, weelo. **May a gi le** kam weelo wafi.

⁹⁴ **Adubay** < **a duba hay**; Maana kam ɓaawo saare.

⁹⁵ **Slimed** kam innde. Ammaa hakkiilo kadi. **Slíméd** kam ba wi'go noppi. Ammaa **slimèd** kam ba wi'go innde.

Ammaa innde weelo kam mi anndaa. Baɓɓatti kam don.

Jaray'en doo kam fuu kanjum? **Jaray** kam baɓɓatti. **Jaray** kam naa Gizigaare? **Jaray** kam jee waddata weelo doo. Naa baɓɓatti fuu. Baɓɓatti iri wara nyaama gawri timmina cak. To ɓe ndanyi mo hitaande man nii, **Jaray**. Be ndokka mo innde **Jaray**.

To Nasaara to laami, hitaande man, **Dogol'en**, way, **Kaftel'en**, way, ɓeye ɓeye. Naa faamataa?

Paul Biya don manaa. Naa ɓe don inndana ɓikkon jotta doo?

Aahiijo don. Fuu don. Waatoo, hitaande ɓe laami mo, hokka ɓinngel mum innde. Darja kadi naa? To nyannde darja man waati fuu, mi anndaa no ɓe ngadta kadi.

No Giziga'en cenndirta innde gorko bee debbo kam ban nii. Feere, hawtan. Feere boo, hawtataa.

Innde debbo bee gorko hawtan. To warti bana inde bana wakeere **Jaray** ban nii, bana hitaande konu. Kuuje ban nii doo, don hawta. Bana hitaande yimɓe duudɓe maayi haa saare, hokka innde ɓinngel gurtingel fuu, wi'a **Gumuc'en**. **Gumuc** kam maayoowo. Tammi maaygo. **Advay'en**, **Kitikil'en**, fuu don. Doo kam ɓaawo waade kam. Innde bone corok.

(10/1/1993)

139. Balinngaago

To ɓinngel balinngake, to ɓidɗo debbo yottake duuɓi sappo e didi, tati, nay, o ɓaɗan. To adda maɓɓe godɗo walaa haa saare kam, ɓaɗan. Ammaa to adda don, doo kam minyiraawo aartataa adda dillugo gorko. Reena. Sey to adda dilli. To o heɓaay gorko maa, o don yara bone maako munya, ɓooyma kam. Ammaa hannde kam fuu dum fistake.

Yoo, feere, to ɓe ndaari adda doo bana jijjake heɓataa gorko, to nyannde minyiraawo dillata suudu gorko, ɓe ngurtina adda dow jiddere. Be njo"ina, ɓe ilina. Be ngadɗa al'aada bana ɓaɗngal goo kadi. Be njaari mo haa gorko, jiddere nii, don joodi ton. Be cudda mo. Ilina. Be mbi'i: "Naa ɓe ɓaɗi mo."

Suy, minyiraawo wurta dilla kadi. Baawo don warti saare boo kal. Haala walaa.

Har amin, ɓooyma kam, ɓidɗo gorko kam sey to o ciki duuɓi noggas fudɗata hoocugo sawru maako, yaha daɓɓita debbo maako,

muuya. Sawru kam o heɓanan hoore maako kadi, fe" a sawru muuyirgal maako. **Ganday ngu bubud.** A yi'i, zamanu ɓooyma kam naa haɓre don? Aaraandu bee boodɗum lee kadi? O heɓi mo dow laawol fuu, o haɓa bee maaru kadi. Doo kam haa haa haa ndu hacca.

Muuygo haa amin kam naa to a laari ɓidɗo debbo fottani maa, malla haa luumo, aartoton fottugo, malla boo, banndiiko'en don haa fattude moodon, malla, goggo maako godɗo, malla, adda maako feere, to ɓe te'i mo haa mon, a yi'i naa derdiiko'en ngaran? To ɓidɗo debbo wari ban nii haa fattude, anndi fakat ɓinngel wayne. Nii fattude kazaa.

Suy kadi, njahaa kadi. Mangariba ban nii nii, ban nii maa yottataa tawon, siwaa sey njamndi jeedifi, jeetati'en goo, fuddata yottaago. Kurum kurum. A yehi bee naange kam naa cementum? Niɓre. To a yehi bee naange, ɓe mbi'an: "A'aa, kulɗo meere? O waran bee naange. Be njalete."

O wara o muuya kadi. To o fudɗi, o don yaha ban nii, doo kam, nde o yidi fuu o yahan. Ammaa jemma kam. To o yehi boo sey o yotto saana baaba'en tawon.

Yowwaa, ɓe ndokka ɓe cuufi, ɓe njoodo ton. Be muuya. Walaa koo ɗume hakkunde maɓɓe kam sey to ɓe ɓaŋi. Waalan boo walaa ko wadta. Naa **madama**⁹⁶ kadi? Foti naa? **Madama** man don.

To o don tokki yahgo muuyoya, to juulde wadi, o soodana ɓinngel debbo kuuje juulde, pade'en, limce'en, walaa ko walaa kadi. Hirsaa yaara'en, o yaara. O yaha o remana baaba'en. O remana daada. Koo duubi ɗifi, tati maa, don wada. Bana tiitgo suudu, wadgo ɗaŋki, remgo ngesa. Baaba ɓinngel debbo don laara mo. O wi'an: "Miin kam sey wayne ɓaŋata ɓiyam kam." Naa yimɓe jur don ngara wada bana nii, don muuya? Ammaa hakkiilo baaba nanngata boo don. "Miin kam wayne ngid-mi." Feere, ɓinngel jaɓa. Feere boo, ɓinngel saloo godɗo mo baaba yidi. Ammaa narrataa baaba kadi. "Nde a salani yam kam, naastugo saare am kam walaa. Miin bee maa kam narral timmi." Sey to ɓinngel wari yoba. Nannga walla sooda mbeewa. Malla sooda gertogal agogunri wara yofra baaba goo. Baaba wolwa haala mum kadi. **Mamal** man wurto. Naa woodi kuli man ɓe don mbi'a **mamal**? To baaba wi'i: "Aan kam a nastataa saare am," to nyannde ɓidɗo gorko wari nasti, baaba do" a.

⁹⁶ **Madama** kam njeenu.

Maayan naa maayataa naa? Hayaa hayaa. Naa **mamal** nanngi mo? Be ngurtina mo saare, suy, o wadda al'aadaaji kuuje man kadi. Be ngadana baaba. Baaba yummo law.

Suy kadi, o wolwa haala maako. Bana tuubgo kadi. Sinaa non kam wadtaako.

(25/1/1992)

140. Te'gal

Fuddfugo doo, min pudfira bee taba. Sooda taba baleehi doo nii. Hufineere ba nde maa doo nii, hebbina nde bulok bee taba baleehi. Njaaraa haa baaba. Kanjum 6e don mbi'a dum yamrude bana 6e mbi'ata goo bee Fulfulde. Be njaarana baaba. "Mi yidi yamgo 6inngel maa doo." Baaba jaba, wolwa haala maako, ewna banniiko'en. Be mbolwa.

Suy, o senndana 6e taba kadi. Kanjum woni fuddam.

Taba baleehi doo nii, ki anndudaa.

O yaari taba, o don tokki muuya kadi. Don yaha, don yaha, don yaha. To baaba wari luumo maa, o soodana mo mbal'en. Soodana daada'en mbal'en.

Yowwaa, haa 6e potti fuu kadi, soodana 6e non. To mbal don ton kam.

Yowwaa, tokki tokki tokki nii, haa to nyannde 6aɲɲgal wadi. 6aɲɲgal kam dum haala maako kadi. Bee 6idfo debbo 6e narra. "Nyannde kazaa ngaraa, 6aɲɲen."

Caka jemma, suy, gorko wara kadi. Be ayna. To yim6e pat nasti, 6e ngurto kadi. Kanjum 6aɲɲgal. To 6e ngurti, o yaada bee ngorgi maako. Be don ngarta, 6e don ngarta, haa to 6e 6adi yottaago wuro, ngorgiijo maako dogga kadi aarta, wara maatina kadi. "Min 6aɲi kazaa." "Min doofoyi hooseere kazaa," 6e mbi'ata haa amin kam. To 6idfo Marwajo, bana Marwa baaba maako'en ngonni, malla Minndif, o yaha o wi'a: "Naa min doofoyi hooseere Minndif hannde?" Nii o wi'irata ka haa saare. Doo kam 6e anndi fakat, 6e 6aɲi debbo, 6e don ngarta. Baaba'en taaska mbeewa, 6e taaska gabagaaji, haa 6e mballina haa dammugal haa yolnde. 6idfo debbo ya66a gal ton nasta. Be ilina kadi, 6e pindina rew6e. Rew6e ilina. "Ili ili ili ili." Gookaali. "Wayne 6aɲi, doofoyi hooseere kazaa."

Baaba'en ceyake, 6e taaskitina kuuje. Naa 6e anndi koo narral walaa boo 6inngel 6aɲi kam doole? Narral wadfa.

Caka jemma, bikkon kam don daani. Don ilina nii, bikkon pina nder doydi. "Dume wadi?" "Naa wayne doofoyi hooseere wuro kazaa?" Doo kam ɓaɗi kadi. Waddi nii, a yi'i, ɓe kirsaa kadi? Jottiido kadi, hirsaa mbeewa. Debbo yaɓɓo, do yaha turturnde nii, daga yaasi haa nasta saare. Don suddi hoore, moji.

Biddo debbo, ɓe don ndokka mo biddo debbo joodo bee maako kadi. Derkeejo mo heewtaay nii. Mo wakeere gorko. Malla boo ɓinngel fattude non nii. To walaa gal asngol gorko doo, ɓe kooca ɓinngel fattude. Don joodi bee maako, yaha nastina suudu kadi. O waala haa leeso maako ton. O waali, nden, o nyaamataa sike? Yarataa boo. Al'aada amin kam caɗɗum. Cementum. Sey to ɓe njobi. Be ndokka ceede. Yardude ndiyam naa? Gorko hokkata kadi. Wada dabare mum hokka. To ɓe njobi yardude ndiyam doo, o fudɗa yargo sedɗa sedɗa. Nyaama. Naa nyaamataa jur kadi? Naa cementum? Teema ɓe kooci haala Fulɓe, teema.

Yowwaa, suy, yaara kadi, ɓe njara ɓe nyaama haa nder suudu.

Yowwaa, to wadi balde didi, tati ɓaawo don, ɓe kirsaa mbeewa. Be mbi'a ɓe doofa gi'e tufɗe ɓinngel debbo dow laawol doo doofa kadi daga kosɗe. Ssey ɓe kirsaa. Be nyaama. Doofa gi'e.

To wadi balde didi, tati ɓaawo don, ɓe kirsaa ngodɗa boo. Be mbi'a: "Doo kam wurtingo mo yaasi." Don kam ɓe kooca, al'aada man don, woodi wiɓɓere man doo, ɓe kooca ɓe njaara haa banndiraawo debbo debbojo, malla goggo maako, malla yaagorgol, maa boo yaapenndo maako. Be njaara sey mbeewa njottiinga haaje, ɓe kirsata. Bellere tal, bana laso maa doo.

Yowwaa, ɓe njaara kadi. Be dofta ɓinngel debbo roonda yaha bee biddo debbo ɓe ndokki ngam haa joododo bee maako doo. Sukaabe dofta ɓe njaha kadi.

Yoo, sukaaɓe kam ngarta. Kanko bee biddo debbo kam ɓe mbaala.

Yoo, jotta kam wadi baakin balde jeego kadi. Jeedidaɓre.

Gorko maako kam siwaa sam. Gorko kam waalataa, heɓataa mo sam maa. Don non tawon.

Yowwaa, haa to balde jeefidi man timmi, o warta saare kadi. To o warti saare, o don joodi bee daada gorko kadi. Don joodi bee daada gorko, don joodi bee daada gorko, haa haa haa duura. Feere maa, lebbi didi. Feere, wafan nduufu maa. To heewtaay jamum.

Yowwaa, to sarti wadi, ɓe mbi'a: "Jotta kam en ndokka ɓe suudu maɓɓe."

Yowwaa, ɓe nyiɓana ɓe haa yaasi kadi. Haa yaasi saare maɓɓe man ton. Feere boo nder saare don. Ammaa ɓooyma kam sey ɓe

ngurtina 6e yaasi. Be ndokka 6e suudu, ngesa. Be ngadana 6e kaatinde. Ba wi'go: "Min njo" inani wayne kaatinde," 6e kirsaa. Be ndefa kadiboo, 6e ngada al'aada man. Be mbi'a: "Hannde kam min ndokki on suudu moodon kadi. Aan boo a defanan gorko maa, ndefaa bana rew6e fuu kadi."

Suy, 6e ke6ata hawtugo bee gorko maako kadi.

Yowwaa, tokki ban nii, tokki ban nii, haa to ruumi, 6e njaha haa baaba debbo. Be mbi'a: "Jotta kam nyalde kazaa min don ngara bee te'gal." Rew6e cooda njawdiri maapinniiri bee deydeyaari boo nii. Be ndefa giya jur. Be ndoonda. Be dowa jawdi didi doo, 6e njaha bee taba haa hufineere ba nde maa doo nii.

Yowwaa, baakin kufineeje didi, tati, nay heewa ndem.

Yowwaa, 6e njaha kadi. Be njaha 6e njotto yolnde baaba debbo. Baaba debbo boo moofata yim6e banndiiko'en, heedidifiraawe maako pat don kawti ban luumo kadi, don ndeeni. Bee boo njottake. Bee te'gal.

Yowwaa, 6e ndaara njawdi, 6e nastina ndi nder saare, 6e ka66a.

Suy, 6e kooa pamardi goo, 6e njaara dow kuli kadi. Baaba wolwa, wolwa, wolwa, wolwa.

Yowwaa, to njawdiri man dimmba gidi gidi gidi, suy, baaba rufa giya haa lesdi wolwana baaba maako'en won6e nder ngaska, banndiiko'en kadi. "Ndaa 6e 6aŋi 6innigel amin. Ndaa 6e ngaddi te'gal. Min ngidi o joodo jam, he6a 6ikkon, koo dume fuu taa naawa mo kadi."

Suy, 6e njara mbal goo. Banndiraa6e njara. Be gorko boo ngarta. Nii te'gal maajum 6e ngadata. Naa ceede duudde maa. Booyma kam njawdiri maapinniiri, bee deydeyaari, bee mbal 6e ndefata. Kanjum wi'ete hunnde kam. Te'gal 6id6o debbo haa amin kam dum **gembre** wi'ete.

(25/1/1992)

Te'an jur. Goddo feere te'an baakin cappande nayo maa. Baaba saare'en maw6e doo. A yi'i 6ooyma kam 6e te'a rew6e jur nii, haa 6e ke6a 6e ndema nii, 6e ndanya 6ikkon boo jur. Goddo mardo saare mawnde, baaba 6ikkon jur, oo, naa fattude fuu hulan mo kadi? Ko o wi'i fuu wuran. Kal kal bee laamdo non. Koo to laamdo wi'i mo: "Wad nii," o wi'an: "Mi ja6ataa." Ngam o woodi 6aawo'en kadi.

Suy, o nuudan non.

(10/1/1990)

141. Pade

Gugudu, dum pade⁹⁷ borne bee Gizigaare. Naa huuwoofe kuude man donno haa Marwa doo daga min bikkon. To a don muuya, buduruwa⁹⁸, juulde to wafi, juulde Giziga'en wafi, sey ngaraa. Coodanaa mo pade borne doo.

Yowwaa, coodanaa mo kuuje maajum pat, pade borne'en, **makapay**'en⁹⁹, walaa ko walaa kadi. Nii, limce. Mi anndaa noy be mbi'irata dum bee Fulfulde. **Makapay** kam jee 6aawo. Be ngadta bee lara. Gal yeeso kam **bokurum**. Be ngadta bee oldiri.

(25/2/1992)

142. Gimol ngol muuyoofo piyiranno gawri

"Sise gawla ngi hozum.

Sise gawla ngi gula."

"Haa haw yaa."

"Sise ngukum."

"Haa haw yaa."

"Dani i gam gawla ta na,
ma daga daw ni wa?"

"Haa haw yaa."

Maana kam ban nii:

"Usoko sukaafo wonfo gal nyaamo.

Usoko wonfo gal nano."

"Haa haw yaa."

"Usoko mon."

"Haa haw yaa."

"To en lattaakino suka'en,
foye'en piyanno gawri?"

"Haa haw yaa."

Nii kam fo comataa. Gawri kam koo buhu teemere maa fo piyan jemmaare woore jotta jotta. Be njaarta ndi hiddeko fajiri. Yimfo

⁹⁷ Pade kam **tarak** wi'ete.

⁹⁸ **Zaj diili** kam ba wi'go buduruwa. Ajabaajo kam **burbula** wi'ete.

⁹⁹ Buduruwa wadataa **makapay** haa keeci.

njaha tawa gawri kam jaartaama. Jemma 6e mbaala fiygo. Be ku66a yiite. Don piya. Rim rim rim rim rim. Surga doo kam. Haa Ngasa too maa on don nana. Cabbi don piya non to gawri duudndi kam.

(23/2/1992)

143. Sukumdu

Sukumdu kam ba wi'go derdam. Derdam 6ii baaba, **sukumdu** non. Derdam 6ii daada, **sukumdu**, 6ii goggo, **sukumdu**, 6ii kaawu. Pat, **sukumdu** non. Fuu derdiraabe.

Yoo, **sukumdu hay** banbanirtaa boo.

Bikkon ma66e boo non. Banbanirtaa. Banja janan6e bee 6e asngol hawtaay on.

Hakkunde **Biy Marva** kan banbantiran. Ammaa asngol badiingol, badiingol nii, haa lima maama'en dido, tato, yowwaa, nii kam banataa.

Yoo kadi, to nasti asngol feere, yehi danyi haa asngol godngol feere, haa tati man kam, doo kam laaran kadi banja. Ndikka. Looti sedda. Ammaa sinaa non kam fuu banataa.

Banjo 6ii bappa kam naa cementum. **Mesem**. Woodaay. Woodgo koo bana leelewal doo nii yahataa. Kadaadum. Haram. To a wadi doo, aan kam, 6e ngurtinte lenyol kam pat. A joodtaa ton. Ba zaman 6ooyma kam 6e mbaran didi fuu, debbo bee gorko pat. Be ngadi woodaay. Dooka yoofaay kadi.

(10/1/1993)

144. Madama

Madama kam to 6inngel debbo malla gorko, naa debbo maako, naa gorko maako, 6e mbaaldi kam naa **madama** wadi? Wonni saare. Waddan hersum. Waddan nyawu. Waddan koo dume fuu haa saare. Doo kam 6e ngidaa. Kanjum hadi yim6e wadgo dum. Be don teddini dum. Koo jonta boo haa ndotti'en kam. Ammaa naa duniya man jii6ake jotta kam? Be don ndaara bana ferdu. Ferdu wodndu boo naa woodaay? Be don mbi'a: "**Kuli madama** kam walaa fahin. Doggi. Nasaara'en parti."

To goddo wadi 6ooyma kam to debbo maa haa besna, sey to o limti fuu. To wor6e dido, o limtan. "Ndaa miin kam nyalde kazaare mi waaldi bee wayne bee wayne." Sey o yewna innde ma66e hiddeko 6inngel wurto. Sunaa non 6inngel don kaali¹⁰⁰ nder reedu ton, wurtataa kadi. O yecca fuu. To o yecci timmini nii, 6inngel goo baa wurti. Sinaa non kam kaali. Feere kam haa maaya bee man to sali.

Gorko boo non. Malla fe"irde fe"a mo. Malla mboodi suppa mo. Irin ban nii gorko boo.

(25/1/1992)

145. Nanngaado kuli

To **kuli** nanngi, nootiido wannginan inde wor6e. "Wayne nodduddo yam. Wayne nodduddo yam. Wayne nodduddo yam."

Haa **kuli** yoofa, 6e cena saare man kadi. Sena bee yiyam. Nanngaa mbaala, kirsaa. Mbicca yiyam haa saare fuu. Be mbi'a: "**Madama** wayne bee wayne, **madama** wayne." Be ewno innde yim6e man.

Suy, looti kadi. Timmi. To mboodi ɲati mo maa, nii, to hannde, 6inngel sali, debbo besnataa boo, nyannde man nde 6inngel wurto kadi paak.

Giddo maa hula. Mo yidaa innde mum wannga. Meere meere boo naa hulan kadi yamgo? **Madama** nanngan.

(10/1/1993)

146. Mayiiti

To 6e maayi, 6e ngadan mayiiti. Nyannde 6e uwata mo nden, hiddeko 6e njaara 6e uwoya, naa sey 6e kirsa mbeewa tawon? Kirsa gertogal. Be ndaarndaarna'en.

Yowwaa, nden, 6e ndoonda kadi, 6e ngada mo nder kasa kadi. 6e ndoonda mo, 6e njaara, 6e uwoya mo. 6e kaddana mo lalal mbeewa. Be kirsa mbeewa ngaa doo, 6e kaddana mo lalal. Al'aada man. Ammaa kadi, dum innde non. Sey goddo mawdo jamum.

Yowwaa, to 6e uwi mo, 6e ngada al'aada kadi. Haa ton man, 6e ngarta saare, 6e kirsa fahin.

¹⁰⁰ Kaali, fottan bee daggi.

Yowwaa, to wadi nyalde didi, tati, kirsu gertogal kadi boo haa 6e ndaara ndeye 6e ngadta lootugo juude goo. To gertogal holli, 6e mbi'a nyannde waanciyel, min don loota juude kadi. Sadaka.

Min uwan haa yaasi wuro. Sukaabe ngasata ngaska. Min uwataa nder wuro kam. Malla yaasi wuro, malla haa becce hooseere, walla haa ladde. Wasan boo wadtaa darde didi, tati kam. Ammaa wadan darnde gootel. Feere maa wadataa.

Suy, 6e ngada bana jiiba nder ton kadi. To 6e ngasi, to 6e njottini, 6e njotti haa deydey nii, 6e ngada jiiba kadi nder ton. Lonyoodu nii, 6e lonnyina, 6e njaara waade kam haa gal ton. Ngadda ledde, 6e ca66a. Walla kaaye, 6e ca66a, 6e ma66a boodfum. Be ngadda sekko 6e cudda.

Suy, 6e ndufa lesdi. Tidfa kadi. Be ngama 6e don ngima, 6e don ngama. Tidfa.

Maay6e kam fuu fotan, sinaa mo kuturu mbari. Mo nyawu kuturu mbari, malla reedu yoogi'en doo, doo kam 6e ngadantaa 6e boodfum kam. Uwgo man bee yeebaare nii non tan. Ammaa ngam accident, malla boo nyawu non mbari mo maayi, doo kam a don huuwa boodfum.

Binngel boo, deydey non. Sey mawdo baaba saare'en. Nden 6e njo" inana 6e ndaraawu kadi. Be pijataa ndaraawu meere meere. Sey baaba saareejo mawdo. Daga nyannde 6e uwata mo nii, 6e puddata, ngarta, acca kadi haa haa haa sadaka maajum kadi to 6e ngadan sadaka. Sadaka 6e ngadta doo, gure gure gure gure, 6adiide 6adiide e daayiide fuu, moofa ngada. Be pija kadi. Be ndarna ndaraawu 6e piya kadi. Ndaraawu kam don haa **masahay**'en. Bawdi kam tum haa yolnde **masahay** kadi. Laamdo maa hebataa dum haa amin. **Masahay** tan. Jawmu lesdi. To o fiyi, 6e anndi woodi ko wadi. Bana haa amin 6ooyma doo, naa goddo man don Godola, 6e don mbi'a bappa **Biy muc**. To o fiyi doo, doo kam Marwa pat, koo laamdo Marwa maa nela ndego haa maako. Be mbi'a bappa **Biy muc** fiya nder zaman Ful6e doo. **Biy muc** laamdo waade. **Biy muc** maayi. **Muc** goo wari hooci mo. Waade hooci mo kanko boo. Daga nyannde o maayi, kuuje man fuu pisti fuu. Walaa koo dume jotta kam.

Kanko kam saa'i o donno doo, o don wara koo haa Marwa doo maa, wara wada al'aada haa winnde maama maako gal saare bonngo doo. Haa ton o wara o hirsu gertoode maako. "Bappa **Biy muc**, bappa **Biy muc**." To 6e don mbolwa, o wolwataa kadi. O defa gertoode maako pat, o timmina, o wada al'aada maako, o huuca

kadi. Tum hitaande fuu, o wara o wadfa ban nii. Jotta kam nde o maayi nii, suy. Walaa faalando dum maa sam.

Don boo benndaay bana maako. Kanko kam o aartu laamdo Yaaya'en naa? Laamdo Yaaya aartu mo naa? Nii. Ammaa fe njaara Amiinu fii laamdo Yaaya haa Godola doo, haa junngo maako fe njaari. "Ndaa gidfo amin oo, hakkilan mo." Kanko kam to o wi'i: "Hunnde nde wadataa, mi jabaay doo, wadftaa boo non." Maayi. Kuuje pat ndillidi bee maako ton.

Anndudo don boo, innde meere non. Taaniiko naa, fii deerfiiko don wadfa kuuje boo. Be anndaa. Benndaay, saataay ba haa maako doo.

(25/1/1992)

147. **Bunahaŋ**

To godfo maayi, ban baaba saare, aran kam, fe mbi'i, don yaha. Mbeelu maako don yaha nasta haa haabiiru. Mbeelu don reena nii, don reena nii, haa to fe ngadi sadaka maako. Be ngada sadaka, fe loota juude. **Bunahaŋ** bee Gizigaare.

Bunahaŋ doo to wadi balde tati, fe loota juude kadi. Loota juude bannidiife luttuŋe yaasi. Dum innde dabi'a maajum nii, fe mbi'ata.

Yowwaa, fe ndefa'en, fe kirsa'en, dume dume. Gertoode boo cappina. Jotta kam balde tati doo deydey wadgo **bunahaŋ** maako kadi. **Haŋ** boo junngo. **Bun** kam lootgo.

Bana wi'go kadi, fe meemi maaydo, hannde, salte man don haa juude maŋŋe? Miin mi anndaa ko saawi nder man kadi. Ammaa fe njo"ina ndiyam, fe ngadda ceŋe daaleehi, fe ngada nder ton.

Suy, koo moy wara, o loota juude maako, o loota juude maako, o loota juude maako.

Suy, fe ngada dabi'a man. To fe timmini, fe ndeena kadiboo. Be don tokki hirsugo kadi. Gertoode tum. Mawŋe ngara njoodo kirsa. Be ndaara no gertogal maayrata, waatirta kadi. To kosngal wakeere toy, fe keŋtan kamŋe kam. Miin kam koo ko anndu-mi.

To kosngal waalaaki har fe ngidi, fe mbi'a: "Doo kam yahataa." Hirsa fahin. Sey to waali gal fe ngidi. Koo jotta boo fe don ngada. Haa amin kam walaa asngol kazaawol tan wadata kam walaa. Asngol fuu don hirsa jee muudum'en. Ndotti'en man don. Be mbi'a wayne bee wayne wadata dum. Haa waade wayne kam, sey wayne bee wayne kirsata gertoode man. Haa waade boo, sey wayne bee wayne.

Yimbe man don. Jabbere maɓɓe don.

Gertogal ngalewal fuu nafan.

Yowwaa, to waali har ɓe ngidi doo, ɓe tabitina nyalde man kadi. Nyalde kazaare doo laati sadaka wayne. Mbeelu man don joodfi nastataa caka yimbe maayɓe ɓooyma doo. Don joodfi feere mum. Don yara bone non tan. Sey ɓe nastina mo caka yimbe.

Be nyaaman haabiiru. Nyaamataa boo don naa? Sinaa ɓenndindo ɓanndu mum. Hannde, jardo lekki ɓenndini ɓanndu kam, ɓe mbi'a, haabiiru fistan lekki man.

To goddo nyaami anndaa, o metti o tawi dum haabiiru, sey o hooa kaaye nii nii, o ɗata keres nii kadi. Timmi.

Yowwaa, to ɓe timmini gertogal holli, ɓe maatina banndiraaɓe fuu. Esiraaɓe to don. Koo moy taasko. Kirsando nyannde man taaskana hirsugo. Defando mbal wadda taaskana defgo mbal.

Yowwaa, suy, nyalaade man, jama'aare hawta kadi. Koo moy fuu wadda ko defi. Mbal maa, nyaamdu maa, saare kam heewa bulok bee kuuje pat. Giya, ton kam fuu, loode loode. Goddo gooto waddan baakin tati, nay, jowi.

Ton kam koo moy yara meere. Walaa hannde soodi, waay, sey wayne bee wayne njarata, woodaa. Mbal sadaka waade wayne jottiido haaɓe. To ɓe njari, ɓe puɗɗa fijirde kadi. Be ndarna ndaraawu ɓe piya. Yimbe pat nguykidi kadi? Naa ɓe don ngama? Be ɓe don ngama, ɓe ɓe don ngama. Rewɓe, worɓe, ɓikkon. Mbaggu.

Haa ton doo, sinaa hannde kam, ban ɓooyma kam, saakataa bilaa haɓre kadi. To haɓre darake, pipim pipim pipim. Be piypiytindira, ɓe njuwnjuwtindira. Labbe labbe, kaafaaje kaafaaje, laɓe kuuwtinira. Ba ɓooyma kadi. Ammaa hannde kam dum duudataa non. Koo to wadon boo, ɓurataa gawaa'u kutupaaje, tuk tuk tuk nii non. Ammaa haɓre moddunde mal kam walaa fahin.

To **masahay** wara wi'a: "Jotta kam min ndokki nyaamdu haa sadaka waane. Mo haaraay, dum haala maako kadi. O yaha o ɓesdita ndiyam haa maayo. Kaardo boo jam kadi. Mo bi'ɗo haaraay kam o yaha maayo, o ɓesdita bee ndiyam kadi."

(6/1/1992)

148. Cufa

To goddo maayi, bee ngapaleewol maapinndiwol ngol leppiwol

ngol, 6e uwrata mo.

Yoo, leppi kam waagan kadi. Esiraa6e doo pat ngadda. Leppi leppi leppi doo, 6e ngadda, 6e mbaaga. "Doo jee wayne. Doo jee wayne. Doo jee wayne. Doo jee wayne." Be limta fuu kadi. Esiraawo fuu wadda. Haa saare heewa leppi. Ammaa naa bee leppi man 6e uwrata maaydo. Be taaskitano dum ngapaleewol man bee anniya kadi. Baaba saare fuu siga ngapaleewol leppiwool maako ngol 6e uwrata bee man. Be ciga, 6e mo"itina boodfum. Nyannde o maayi nii, suy, 6e nasta beembal, 6e ngurtina. Be liira kadi. Be ngada al'aada man fuu. To 6e timmini, 6e ngurtina, suy. To 6e ngiwi mo, timmi, taara, ngadda juude doo kippa haa yeeso. Taara hoore goo bee yeeso doo fuu bee leppi kadi, taari fuu, suy, 6e nastina mo nder ngapaleewol goo.

Haa amin kam walaa jo"ini jo"ini kam. Don waali non nii.

Suy, 6e ngama sekko hudo wajaalo doo. Be nastina mo nder ton fahin, laati bana caisse kadi. Be ndoondo. To 6e kirsi, 6e ndufa kuroori doo, 6e mbolwana mo, 6e mbolwana mo. To goddo mbari mo maa, o holla kadi, o sappina. To mistiriijo nyaami mo, non. To dum lekki non mbari mo ba lawru feere, yaha holla. "Ndaa hunnde kaza wadi yam." To 6e ndoondi mo, o yaha o ja66ita deerdiiko'en. To deerdiraa6e maako don, walla, bana hamma maako yaha haa yolnde fuu ja66ita mo. "Mi don hoota kadi. Mi don hoota." Ja66ita.

Suy, 6e ngadda ndiyam kuroori njigaari doo. Be mbolwa haala ma66e. "Alla yaare jam. Hannde kam a hooti yim6e men boo, anndinaa 6e kadi, minin boo min don e duniya. Alla hoore jam, hawte jam bee yim6e maafa. Yoo kadi, to a yehi ton boo, taa yejjitit min kadi. Aan kam yitere woore nder ngaska, woore boo haa yaasi. Woore haa ngaska, woore haa yaasi. To fiddo, hannde, mo nanataa, eltaa mo. A don laara 6e. To woodi nafaowo boo, a don barkidina mo." Naa nii? Mbolwanaa mo.

Suy, o wurta o dilla kadi. To wurti yaasi, dogga bee semmbe. To goddo nyaami mo, bee semmbe, sukaa6e don taasna. Be mbaawataa. Yim6e baakin dido, nayo, ndoondi mo, ammaa doggan bana henndu parr.

Suy, yaha fukka kadi pim, do"a. To debbo man nyaami mo, haa dammugal suudu debbo man, walla boo dow hayre namgo maako doo. Walla boo haa kaatindfe de o defata ton. To lekki boo, les lekki man kin o yahata, fukka.

To 6e don mbi'a nyaami mbeelu kadi bee mistiraaku. Be anndi. Be mbi'an: "Debbo kazaajo nyaami mo."

Yoo, to gorko boo, caka cak saare les beembal maako nii har 6e pusata hoore doo, ton kadi o hollata: "Haa doo o nyaami yam, haa doo 6e timmini yam."

To nyaamaay boo, cir, yaha yenaande. *Direct* non 6e anndi walaa ko wafi mo.

Yoo, to dum bana, hannde, wadgo **madama** bee rew6e feere feere, waalgo bee rew6e'en doo, **kuli** man nanngi mo, mbari mo boo, to don yaha doo, walaa fijirde kadi. Don yaha bana goddo mo semti goo guzo guzo guzo guzo non nii, haa njottina mo yenaande. Be anndi doo kam o don semti ngam hunnde nde haanaay wadeego wafi. Giziga'en kam haala duufi dey? Beldum meere haala ma66e doo.

Suy, to 6e njotti, 6e taara yenaande maako doo nde tati, to o gorko. Taara nde tati, suy, 6e mballina, njo"ini nii. Debbo boo nde didi, walla, nay.

Yoo, gorko kam sey bee joori kadi. Debbo kam foti. Sadaka boo non. Nyalaade sadaka boo, walla nyalaade tata6re, walla, joweedifa6re, gorko. Debbo boo, walla, nyalde naya6re, walla, jeetata6re.

Be mballini kadi, suy, goddo annduco al'aada wara yima, ma66ita nofru, wadda baaneyel nii, tappa ngen ngen ngen ngen ngen ngen. Ma66ita nofru kadi, fudfa yimgo, haa ma66itana mo nofru nana.

Yowwaa, 6e ngima. To 6e ngimi, yowwaa, 6e pista mo, 6e ngurtina hudo sekko 6e ngamno goo, nastina nder yenaande kadi.

Yowwaa, nastini nder yenaande, 6e mo"itina boodfum, ngadda ledde, 6e cudda, 6e pala pala pala pala haa bana caisse goo. Ledde loorde loorde ban doo, deya too doo nii. Fuu ma66a. To 6e ngaddi, 6e cudda sekko goo dow don. Suddi nii, suy, kadiboo, ngadda lesdi kadi. Be ira. To 6e iri gootel, 6e ngurto, 6e ndamma, 6e don ngima. Be ndamma, 6e tidfa. Kadiboo, 6e ngurto, 6e ira lesdi feere. Kadiboo, 6e nasta 6e tidfa. Be ngurto, haa nde jowi naa, to gorko? Debbo boo, nay, jeego.

Suy, timma. Be ngadda 6e taarna bee kaa'e kadi. Anndaa fakat kam doo kam yenaande. Fiiltina bee kaa'e.

Suy, 6e ngada al'aada haa 6i66e kadi. Be ka66ana 6e gabagaaji jey 6e njaari daga saare doo haa junngo. Feere, 6e 6ilana mo bana layaaru nii. Feere boo haa keeci. Feere, haa wakkana mo bana dumaani. Be66en mbi'ete wadoo6e al'aada kadi. Nii 6e ngarta wuro.

Nyannde man mal kam sinaa to fotootiri bee 6e ndefi giya nder fattude man, to maayi, nyalaade man kam 6e njaran meere. Walaa

sippi. Walaa soori kadi. Be njara meere non. Doo kam koo suudinoobe ndefi ton boo, 6e ndokka yim6e meere meere. To fotootiri bee nyalaade nde walaa mbal boo, a yi'i, 6e ndeena nyalaade haa ngadta sadaka mawnde kadi.

Yowwaa, 6e kirsa kadiboo, ndufa yiyam, 6ola laral goo, ngurtina ngada al'aada, ndefa kusel man, nyaama. Ben boo sey bee wadgo al'aada man kadi. Naa *famille* fuu wadta al'aada? Saare fuu woodi yim6e ma66e. "Dum wayne wadta." Haa am kam walaa, siriw non kadi. Maayi nii maayi non. Halki.

Yim6e don mbaala ton haa balde tati, ngada sadaka, 6e caako. Be ndeena kadiboo. Be tokka 6e kirsa nii haa 6e ndeena. To gertogal sappini, 6e pudfa wadgo sadaka kadi. Doo kam lesdi fuu, yim6e fuu ngara. Pattule fuu njaha. Juulde seyo nyannde man kam. Dammirle. Be njab6iti mo. Timmi kadi. Aan kam halki kadi. Senndiri bee maako. Be nastini mo caka yim6e maako. **Cufa** doo, mayiiti man kadi. **Cufa** kam haa timmitirde kadi. Fudfam kam 6e don mbi'a lootgo juude. **Bunahaŋ**.

(10/1/1993)

149. Muk6sl

To woodi ginnaaji wurtoto haa rew6e doo, 6e don mbi'a **muk6sl**. Wurto bee labbe. Puldebbo timmudo sike? To kuuje man ngurti doo, waanee. Sukaabe koo dido, tato, mbaawataa nanngugo mo. Fiira, diwa, fija, nii. Baakin sappo ngurto. Haa wayne, haa wayne, haa wayne. Waatoo, maay6e 6ooyma ngurtoto haa 6i66e ma66e kadi, ngurto, mbi'a: "Doo wayne wari. Oo wayne wari haa sadaka wayne doo." Maay6e ndotti'en boo 6e limta 6e.

Suy, 6e ewna 6ikkon ma66e. To taaniraa6e don, 6e ngara 6e mbolwana 6e. "Njoodde jam kadi. Haa amin, haa joo6nde amin too, bone don. Sey kakkilon. Mbadon hakkiilo."

Hunnde nde, miin kam mi waaboo boo, koo, mi faamaay. Ngam puldebbo timmudo diwa bana mahol maa doo nii, caar, o yaha o hoda gada ton. Naa kuuje ginnaaji? **Setine**.

Yowwaa, 6e don mbi'a: "**Muk6sl**'en ngurti. **Muk6sl** wurti." Doo kam maay6e 6ooyma ngurtoto, ngara haa sadaka banndiraawo ma66e.

Binngel ngel ngel nanataa boo, 6e padfa. Be mbi'a: "Ewnanee yam wayne. Binngel ngel doo nanataa." Fadfa bee cabbi ma66e

doo. "Mi tuubi, mi tuubi, mi meetataa." Binnel boo wi'a nii. Be donno ami duniya man ban nii. Jotta kam kuuje man nde mbaati nii, koo ko ngel nanataa.

(25/1/1992)

150. Heɓtugo daliila waade

Har amin doo, to debbo, malla gorko, malla binnel, to mistiri nyaami mo, waade man don yaha sappina. Maaydo man doo sappinan. Be mbolwa haala maɓɓe. Be njaha dow **kuli** maɓɓe. Be mbolwa nii, to goddo nyaami maa boo sey mbolwaa. To hannde, dum ginnawol non mbari maa boo, sey cappinaa. Malla ginnawol lekki fuu, cappinaa. To ɓe ngadi al'aadaaji maɓɓe timmi, ɓe ngari roondugo mo, ɓe mbolwa, ɓe nama gawri njigaari doo, kuroori man, ɓe ngada nder ndiyam.

Suy, ɓe ndufa kadi. **Sakaɗ**¹⁰¹ kadi.

Suy, dogga kadi. Haa yimɓe roonta maaydo goo.

Suy, huunde goo warta bana noy naa goo, suy, ɓe ndogga kadi bee sembe. Sukaafɓe, hannde, dogganɓe meere doo, waawataa jokkaago ɓe. Be don ndogga non. Waade don dogga non. Maaydo don dogga non. Be don taasna, don taasna. "Nanngɛe, nanngɛe, nanngɛe." Bana ɓe don haa doo doo, en don haa doo, kamɓe ɓe cotti haa Dugoy too. Dogga bee pargal non bee yimɓe ɓe anndaa no ɓe ndoggirta sam.

Suy, yaha do" a, piim, haa nder too. Debbo nyaami mo maa, yaha do" a dow hayre namarde maako.

Yoo, to baaba saare boo, caka saare. To debbo nyaami mo, ndego haa dammugal debbo man. Do" a, suy, ngada haɓre kadi. "Min kefti jotta mo nyaami mo." Haɓre yimɓe maako yumma kadi. Be mbarmbartira.

To ginnawol lekki nonnon nanngi mbari, nden, boo yaha do" a les lekki man. Ginnawol kam **setina** wi'ete.

Cuy, ɓe kefta huunde kazaare wadi mo.

Ayiibe don kam sey wannga.

Kaay, ɓe ngoodi annde man jamum. Ammaa kuuje man don yaha waatgo non nii. Feere kam to wadi ban nii maa, to yehi do" i, maaydo yehi do" i haa saare goddo man, bana ɓe ndoondi, to yehi do" i haa

¹⁰¹ **Sakaɗ** kam njaree.

saare man, malla dammugal debbo, suy, ɓe njaha ngullo haa baariki kadi. "Be kaadani yam mistiraaku. Be mbi'i mi nyaami wayne."

Suy, ɓe ngada haala man. Kiita. Ammaa aran kam nyaamɗo mo maayɗo do"i haa saare maako doo, suy, dogga. To laari ban nii nii, dogga. "Nanngɛe nanngɛe." Ndego ɓe mbara mo. Ndego boo ɓe kada yimɓe: "Taa ngadɛe sababu. Taa mbarmbartiree. Taa ngadɛe dum. Maayɗo kam maayi timmi? Taa ngadɛe dum." Ndotti'en keeda hakkunde man. Haala Giziga'en doo caddum.

Haala maɓɓe doo bee kuuje ginnaaji doo, caddum. Mi anndaa noy ɓe ngaarata dum nii, haa dum wanngina. Godɗo man boo wi'a: "Miin nyaami mo." Don wi'a boo.

Miin kam bee gite am mal kam mi laaraay. Ammaa ɓe don mbi'a.
(10/1/1990)

XV. MIIN BEE ÉGLISE

151. Ya mbur Marva

Ya mbur Marva¹⁰² kam ba wi'go: "Miin kam Marwaaajo." Kanko wi'ete Marwaaajo jawmu lesdi. Walaa godɗo feere kadi. Ko wari ɓaawo don kam fuu dum wariwari non.

(4/3/1986)

152. Lenyol am

Miin ɓii Astanko. Astanko ɓii Gidaŋ. Gidaŋ ɓii Adiya. Adiya ɓii Madva. Madva ɓii Kekere. Kekere ɓii Bilwa.

Astanko te'i gootel non. **Gidaŋ** kam te'i baakin dido. Ammaa o maaylawi kadi. Daga o derke o maayi. Baaba am doo, o acci mo duuɓi sappo e didi. Kanko wi'ete afo maako boo.

Mo aarti yam doon. Ammaa mi anndaa innde maako. A yi'i debbo mo aarti te'go doo, danyi ɓikkon didon. Binngel gorgel gootel bee binngel dewel boo gootel.

Yoo, debbo man maayi. Bikkon goo boo maayi. Dido fuu.

Suy, o te'i daada am kadi. Daada am boo fudɗi danygo yam.

¹⁰² **Mbur Marva** kam gooto. **Məzlay Marva hay** kam duudɓe.

Danyi Ndujja, Faadimatu, Jebba, Yuguda, Danna, Guddal, Maaliki. Biɓɓe njeetato. Miin on aarti. Miin wi'ete afo hannde kam.

Debboojo Pullo yehi fotootiri ɓe ndanyi yam, wakkati man boo hokkugo innde wadi, suy, kanko ɓe yami mo. O wi'i: "Hokku ɓinngel doo innde."

Suy, ɓe ndokki yam innde Siddi.

Too, asngol daada am kam iwi gal Muskun'en. Asngol **Mulgur** wi'ete. Be ekkiti wolde Giziga. **Mulgur**'en don har Dobba.

Silas¹⁰³, dum innde *église*.

(4/3/1986)

153. Baaba am sarkin paawa no

Baaba am kam hirsanno. O sarkin paawa no kadi.

To ɓe kirsi, reedu kam ɓe cooran pat. Kusel gelen *filet* doo, o hooa. Gal reedu boo, gal tekkudum tekkudum. Kanjum wi'ete ceembarru. Hejre boo, babal man don. Kuuje gal beldum beldum kam fuu, nii taasaawo. Tum ban nii har am kam. Foroy. Haa min cafta kusel maa, sey min ngidi haako lakasko. Bii Aadamaajo kam woodaay dey? To safti kusel boo, yidaa, daɓɓita haako halluko nyaama.

Haa ngon-mi jotta kam naa beldum sottake? Teeti. Mi wadi saare am. Miin kam mi tawaay weelo non kam.

(23/1/1992)

154. Moogazaŋ, danyarde am

Daada am duuɓi sappoo e jeewo. Duuɓi baaba am kam mi anndaa. Teema o wadan duuɓi noggas e jowi naa. O ɓaŋnoodo debbo goddo feere. Debbo man maayi, dalani mo ɓikkon didon. Debbo man boo maayi. Bikkon boo maayi.

Suy, o ɓaŋi daada am kadi. O howi. O ɓaŋi mo doo, bana o wi'ata kam, ɓe ngari ɓe njoodi haa Dugoy doo. Joodi haa Dugoy doo, suy,

¹⁰³ Silas, dum sahaaboojo Paul. Dum innde rammtinaande Silvanus. Kayre don haa Kuude Nelaabe, fasluwol 15, aaya 22; fasluwol 16, aaya 19 bee fasluwol 17, aayaare 4. Bee wolde Rumre, ɓe mbinndiran bana Silas. Ammaa bee Fulfulde boo ɓe mbi'an bana Silaas.

bappa maako mawnindo mo, o wi'i kanko kam o jaɓaay, sey o huuca kommbi maako.

Yowwaa, o dooli mo. O huuci kadi. Nde ɓe kuuci, ɓe ndanyi yam miin kadi.

Yowwaa, ɓe ndanyi minyam. Mi feeri gite kam. Miin kam haa mi yaha janngirde kam mi mawni non. Duuɓi ɓooyma doo, a yi'i janngirde sadi, buutaay sey haa Marwa, ndego haa Dobba too. Ban nii haa tagu yoyi boodfum. Koo duuɓi sappo maa wafi. Mi yehi lakol gal Dobba ton. Yaha kosɗe, jooda warta kadi boo. Mi joodi haa yimɓe. Haa ton baariki don. Yaake man lekol *primaire* doo kamɓe kam nyaamdu don. Be don wallina ɓikkon. ɓikkon kuuwa. To ɓe ngurti lekol doo, gal *une heure* doo, nii, ɓe kuuwa. Be kuuwa doo kam, lekol walaa asiri kadi. Huuwooɓe sedɗa sedɗa tappa birik. Haa maayo wula.

Yowwaa, fajiri boo lekol. Nii non.

Yoo, defooɓe nyiiri don.

Yoo, mi joodi haa lekol duuɓi jowi, jeego.

Baawo don mi nasti lekol *biblique* kadi.

(20/2/1992)

155. No mi ɓaŋri debbo am

Mi mawni law law, mi fotootiri bee debbo am haa luumo Gayak. Mi ɓaŋri debbo am bee duuɓi sappo e jeedifi¹⁰⁴. Debbo am boo mari duuɓi sappo e nay. Baaba am wi'i: "Binngel am ɓaŋataa law. Duuɓi maako cikaay." Daada boo ban nii. Waatoo, mi yahanno luumo Gayak. Tonton, mi fotootiri bee buduruwa, mo laati debbo am jonta.

Suy, bappaanyo wi'i: "Binngel yidi mo. Kanko boo to o yidi kam cuy lee. Naa woodi haala goo. O jooda o mawna saare ton lee." Tokki tokki nii, baaba am boo jaɓi ka, acci haala man kadi.

Nii min ɓaŋi, min njoodi haa saare amin ton bana derɗiraaɓe. Duuɓu fuu kadi. Haa min ciki sappoo e jeetati fuu. Haa mi yaha haa Jaarengol kam bee maako. *Terrain* am *personnel* haa Jaarengol kam ɓaawo man, mi heɓi kadi hitaande 1970. Coggu boo ɓuraay booro nay.

Miin bee debbo am ndanydi ɓiɓɓe njeetato. Ndaa innde bee hitaande danyarde ɓiɓɓe am: Hammadu, 1962; Aysa, 1965; Diija,

¹⁰⁴ Waatoo, hitaande 1959.

1969; Daniyel, 1971; Jonathan, 1974; Polin, 1977; Barnabas, 1979, bee Gabriyel, 1981.

(20/2/1992)

156. Innde Ful6e

Yoo, 6inngel mawniraayel kam naa Hammadu? Aysa, Diija, Daniyel, Jonatan, Polin, Barnabas, Gabriyel. Innde debbo am boo Mamma Ruth.

Innde Gizigaare kam walaa, halki non. Haa amin fuu, minin boo min njoweetato. Walaa mardo innde Gizigaare. Koo gooto caka amin. Siddi boo Fulfulde. Deerdam tokkiido yam boo, Ndujja, Faadimatu, Jebba, Danna, Yuguda, Guddal, Maaliki.

Mo faamataa Fulfulde kam caddum.

(4/3/1986)

157. No mi laatori pasteer

Fuddam kam haala diina nii. A yi'i miin kam 6e ndanyi yam haa Moogazan.

Yoo, min don keeddootiri bee Ful6e boo. Baaba am kam don yilla 6e tum. To o yehi har Ful6e, o nana waazu har ma66e. Be don mbi'a. Ndaa to goddo maayi, huuwi kalludi haa duniya doo, nyannde man tammi wargo. Bana nyannde darngal, 6e mbi'ata doo. Be tammi hiitugo mo. Kiita goddo kalludo kam nder yiite. Be ngula mo. Yiite nyifataa haa abadaa abadin. Nii non o don joodi nder maage tum, don woya non. Yanngito non.

Yoo, tum o don wi'a-mmi haala man.

Nden, ka nasti yam 6ernde kadi.

Saa'i man wadan duubi sappoo e didi'en, sappoo e tati'en. Mi fuddi numgo joodnde duniya, alaa'hira, maayde kadi.

Suy, o wolwan boo haala malaa'ika'en. Naa a yi'i naa minin kam min mboowaayno nango irin doo?

Cuy kadi, to mi don numa, haa gondi mbannga. Mbi'-mi jotta doo, to tagu maayi kam haa toy kadi haa aljanna man naa, koo haa yiite yahata naa, noy noy naa, numooji don haa nder am doo tum tum tum tum. Huuwi huuwi huuwi nii. Koo to mi yehi ladde,

mi joodo feere am, mi numa, mi woya. Mbi'-mi jotta nii, to mi maayi nii, mi halka? Yaake man boo walaa kallungal mi huuwata boo.

Yoo, suy, nyannde feere, ngi'-mi yimbe waazu. Yimbe *mission* tokki laawol. *La Mission Unie du Soudan. Mission protestante.*

Yoo, yimbe *Eichenberger* kadi. Kanko kam haa Mokolo ton woni? Mise Stener. O maayi nyawu non.

Yoo, yimbe yummoto daga Jaarengol doo nii, tokka laawol njaha Moogazaŋ doo. To be njehi, be mbura, be ndilla haa nder kooseeje haa Mufu'en haa dow hooseere. Be mbi'a naa bee kam fattude Juulbe, koo to be ngaazini boo be nanataa, be njafataa, be don bee diina maɓbe. Nii nii be daɓɓitoyi Mufu'en haa dow hooseere.

Yoo, nden, haa lewru *mars* nii, naange wadi. Be don ngarta.

Suy, domka nanngi be kadi. Be comi boo. Be celi haa fattude amin kadi. Mi anndaa hitaande man mal. Be tawi min njoododi bee baabaaji amin'en bee fikkon haa les ɓokki makki nii. A yi'i saa'i lewru *mars* doo, to naange nyalwi, deydey midi, *une heure*'en doo, yimbe don njoodo les lekki man kadi. Ngeewta. Sannyooɓe don cannya. Hannde, wamooɓe cekke don ngama. Foflooɓe bami¹⁰⁵ don ngada.

Suy, be yami ndiyam. Min ndokki be njari. Haa be ciwti. Be tato. Nyannde man kam Nasaara walaa. Baleeɓe non.

Nden, be yami ndiyam, be njari, be ciwti haa be comti.

Yowwaa, nde be ngari huucugo, nde be tawi naa min Fulbe, asngol godngol feere, wolde nde min mbolwata boo naa Fulfulde. Yimbe kam be Cad nii, Sara'en.

Suy, be mbi'i: "Min ngidaa accugo on non. Hiddeko min ndilla doo, sey, min tora Alla tawon. Min njuula."

Suy, bappa am feere nii wi'ata-mmi: "Yah waddan be ndiyam haa be nannga." Be mbi'i: "A"aa, minin kam juulde am kam lattaaki ba juulde juulbe, sey loota kosde, loota juude'en, doo, fudɗa juula. Naa kan. Minin kam min maɓɓa gite non nii, min mbolwa wolde amin haa Alla nii, dum tornde non."

Yoo, bappa wi'i: "Hii, doo diina doo boo diina feere naa? Malla diina kam min anndi gal juulbe tokki doo." Be mbi'i: "A"aa, feere. Minin kam Iisa min tokki."

Yoo, bappa min goo wi'ata: "Mbaɗee lee juulde mon. Haa min ngi'a, minin boo."

¹⁰⁵ Bamol / bami.

Suy, 6e njuuli kadi, mbolwi. Baawo don, 6e mbi'i: "Ndaa waazu amin kam ndaa no dum wa'i." Be ngurtini foto bana suura Hawwaa'u, Aadamu yaake haa mboodi esta 6e haa jarne doo. Kanjum 6e ngurtini. Bana foto naa, dessein naa, tagu anndaa. Suy, 6e mbi'i.

Ndaa goddo arano bee debbo arano 6e Alla tagi, ndaa 6e. Yowwaa, 6e donno njoodi jam bee Allaa. Be donno njoodi haa jarne.

Nden, mboodi wari esti 6e. Ngam woodi lekki gonki caka jarne man. All wi'i 6e 6i66e ledde nder jarne doo pat nyaamee. Ammaa ndaa woodi lekki gooti caka jarne doo, kanki kam dum lekki anndugo boodfum bee kalludum. Taa nyaamee. Taa meemee. Ngam to on nyaami, o maayan maayde naawnde. Waade heban on. Yoo, kadi mboodi wari esti Hawwaa'u goo.

Suy, o forti junngo maako, itti 6inngel lekki goo, 6enndaloore maaki. O nyaami. Nde o nyaami, suy, 6anndu maako wayliti kadi. Goriiko warti boo, tawti mo waylitake, na ba naane. Hakkiilo wayliti. Banndu boo wayliti. O temmbo no, o anndaano hannde.

Suy, gorko yami mo kadi: "Ko wadi?"

Yowwaa, o fuddi lornango goriiko kadi. "Ndaa ndaa ndaa ko Mboodi waadi bee am. O esti yam. Mi nyaami 6enndaloore lekki goo. Aan boo to a yidi yam maa, a nyaami. Acci yam boo miin kam naa feere am non kadi?"

Suy, goriiko boo nyaami.

Suy, 6e ngayliti 6e dido pat. Don kadi Alla sali ja6go 6e bana yim6e maako kadi, riiwi 6e.

Nden, 6e ngari haa duniya kadi. Alla jippini 6e haa duniya.

Suy, Alla wi'i 6e 6e kebbina duniyaaru ndu. Be ndanya kadi 6ikkon haa duniyaaru heewa.

Yowwaa, nden, 6e pudfi danygo kadi. Duniyaaru heewi bee asli yim6e.

Yoo, 6aawo don, 6e don duuda. Hakke don 6esda, 6e don maaya. Alla laari kadi. Yidi yim6e. Yim6e 6e o tagi doo fuu, o tagaayno 6e fuddam kam ngam haa o halka 6e. O tagi 6e doo, haa 6e njoodo 6e ngeeda jam bee maako.

Yoo, neddo sali nanango Alla, downtani mboodi lattiindi Saydaan go.

Yowwaa, Allaa boo sali kadi. "Miin tagdo on nii, on tokkataako yam? Tokkon hannde ganyo am. Kala ko mi tagi fuu da66ita

wonnugo nii, suy, tokkon dum?"

Yowwaa, suy, nii kadi.

Nden, Alla laari nde yidi hisnugo neddo, suy, daɓɓiti laawol neldugo Annabi Iisa. Kanko kadi o darni. O wi'i kanko wi'ete laawol, kanko wi'ete dammugal nastugo laamu Allaa.

Yoo, mo nuddini mo, tokki mo fuu, kiita jippake dow hoore maako. Walaa dow maako kadi. O yaafanto dum aybeeji muudum.

Haala kam nasti bernde am. Mi jaɓi. Suy kadi, mi don hula wanningo. Mi yidi ngam mi hulan. Yaake man m hoyaa. Dum caddum jamum. Ndotti'en njaɓataa dum. Suy, ɓe mbi'i: "To on ngidi min tokko wargo haa mon doo, sey, mbi'on

njaɓi. Nden kam min tokkoto wargo alat alat kam fuu kadi." Suy, woodi bappa am feere nii, gooto. Kanko kam baaba saare, ɓanti ngo, o wi'i: "Miin kam kmi yidi." Ammaa yimɓe feere kam pat calake. Minin ɓikkon boo haa min mbi'a: "Min ngidi" goo, min don kula baaba'en.

Suy, ɓe kooti.

Suy, ɓe accaay wargo kadi. Alat fuu ɓe don njaha, ɓe don njaha, ɓe don njaha. Miin boo mi yaha. Min cuura, cuy, min ngara, min nana. To min nani, min cankita, min ndilla.

Suy, tum. Tokki kadi. Haa tagu nder bernde kadi.

Suy, bappaanyo am nasti, aarti. Min don tokka mo kadi. Tokki tokki tokki haa woodi Nasaara feere nii, wi'ete Misyu Zimirman. O wi'i yam: "Hannde, ndaa aan oo, aan wi'ete Gizigaajo nii, jaɓdo wolde ndee. Aarti jaɓi. Hoore maɓɓiti. Janngan. Anndi fuu. Sey aan. Yoo, nii. Ndaa min don maɓɓita janngirde. Min don maɓɓita janngirde ngam janngingo mallum'en mission doo. To a yidi, mi winnda innde maa, ngaraa. Njanngaa."

Suy, mbi'-mi: "Miin kam mi anndaa. Sey to baaba am dujani yam."

Yoo, o wi'i: "A"aa, doo, haala baaba walaa. Haala maa bee Allaa non."

Yoo, suy, mi jaɓi. O winndi innde am.

Suy, o hooti lesdi maɓɓe. Haa min ngejjiti haala man.

Suy, Misyu Estenner wari. Misyu Estenner wi'i tawi innde am dow derewol. Mi don haa *candidat* haa janngirde maajum caka pukara'en maajum doo. Sey mi taasko. Mi wara nyannde kazaa, ɓe maɓɓita. Mi don yaha bee moota, hooça kuuje maa, ngaraa.

Hii, mbi'-mi: "Kaay, miin kam mi jaɓataa." O wi'i: "Naa bee am on narri. Mi wari mi tawi. A narri bee Misyu Zimirman."

Suy, mi jaɓi mi tokki janngirde man kadi, wari. Janngirde kam haa Jaarengol doo nii. Haa 1960 yaaƙe man doo.

Suy, miin boo mi tokki, mi tokki, mi tokki, haa mi timmini, ɓe puɗɗi nelgo yam haa ladde kadi haa Kooseewa. Be maɓɓiti ɓe puɗɗi ton.

Yowwaa, mi wadi duuɓi tati. Be mbi'i: "Janngirde kam sey on ɓesda *niveau* man. Onon aartuɓe hannde marɓe anndal doo, sey loroodon kadiboo, on tokkita janngirde."

Suy, ɓe lorni min kadiboo. Be ngadi kur feere, *l'école spéciale* feere nii. Jotta kam lekol man walaa haa do. Min ngadi duuɓi nay. Baawo don boo, o wari o wadi tati fayin.

Yowwaa, nden kadi, mi yehi Meri. Mi warti gal lesdi Godola doo.

Yowwaa, suy, nden, yehi Dow Maayo kadi. Daga ton haa hannde mi sottaay. Mi don jogi kuugal man kadi. Sannjaay sam. Bernde woore non. Kanjum wadi daliila mi nasti janngirde man, nasti kuugal pasteerku doo. Ngam hannde hisnugo yimɓe wodɓe ɓe anndaano diina maajum. Mi wolwana ɓe.

Yoo, yimɓe boo jur kadi. Jur njaɓi. Jur keɓti. Jotta kam. Tinndini laawol. Naa kadi, kanjum wadi daliila. Naa nii?

(10/1/1990)

158. *École biblique*

Classe gootel non haa saare Nasaaraajo feere nii o waalanno ton. Pukara'en ɓuran sappo. Gal *église baptiste*, gal *égalise évangélique*, nii. Mi heedino gal *évangélique*. Haa hannde, naa fuu dum hawti?

Naa *Mission Unie du Soudan*?

Baawo man danyi *Union des Églises Évangéliques du Cameroun* kadi.

Duuɓi nay, mi timmini nii. Be yaari yam ladde. Haa Kooseewa duuɓi tati. Mi warti fahin. Mi ɓesdi janngirde man. Mi wadi *cours complémentaire*. Janngi duuɓi tati fahin. Mi janngi *Bible* Faransaare. *Sainte Bible*. Mi ɓesdi Faransaare sedɗa, defte anndal sedɗa. Naa ɓesdi? Koo loran boo naa yidi tum. Ammaa kadi naa heɓataa kadi? Mi janngidi bee Luc Ngrem¹⁰⁶. Woodi Kulla. Yimɓe duudɓe. Be ngadan ko wadta njeetato haa janngirde man. Janngi. Nafi soosay.

¹⁰⁶ Luc kam Matakamjo. O maaynaama hitaande 1994

Mi hefino 6ikkon didon.

Baawo man mi joodi haa Meri lebbi nay non. Mi huuwi kuugal ban kuuwan-mi jotta doo nii. Mi joodi Zakaliyaw too. Zakaliyaw gada Zala too. Joodi ton boo lebbi nay.

Mi warti Jaareengol nduufu.

Suy, mi huuci Dow Maayo doo kadi. Tonton mi hefi Diija, Daniyel mo maayi. Jonathan doo, min njaari haa junngo lebbi sedda non. Min ndanyi mo haa doo, min njaari Dow Maayo. Baawo don kadi, Polin wari, Barnabas, e Gabriyel

Suy, min acci kadi. Naa walaa fahin kadi?

(20/2/1992)

Be ekkitini min aran kam Laataanooji, fuddam. Kanjum wi'ete base kadi gal Alkawal Kiidngal kam. Yosuw'en doo boo janngi.

Yoo, nasti gal Alkawal Kesal kadi. Fudda gal Markus'en doo.

Yowwaa, Luka'en, wari janngi Bataakeeji bana Kuude Nelaafe doo, bee Bataakeeji Piyer, Wahayyu Yuhana boo.

Deftere kam haa am kam haa mi wi'a nde fottanaay yam, nde fottani yam kam walaa.

Ammaa kadi, gal anndal luggi kam miin kam gal Laataanooji bee Kuude Nelaafe doo. Doo kam mi yidi masin.

Laataanooji doo anndina ban noye kuuje ngardi, ban noye neddo wardi e duniya, noye neddo tammi accugo duniya. Laataanooji wi'ete hoore, base kadi, caɓɓawal. Mi janngi. Mi janngini boo fahin ɓaawo don. Inngilisjo lorni Alkawal Kesal non, lornaay Kiidngal. Deftere Laataanooji kam don feere mum. Lornudo Deftere Laataanooji kam *Taylor*¹⁰⁷ wi'ete. O donno haa Yoola.

(20/2/1992)

159. Pasterku

Timmititɓe *école biblique* fuu laatataako paster. Sey ɓe ndaara kuugal maɓɓe, to dum dari cir, nden, ɓe luttata hokkugo ɓe barka pasterku. Mi hefi pasterku daga 1971. Be njo"ini juude dow hoore am haa *église* Dow Maayo. Ndotti'en daga *Kurt Östertag*'en, *Eichenberger*'en ngari.

(20/2/1992)

¹⁰⁷ Waatoo, F. W. Taylor wi'ete. Dum Inngilisjo.

160. Waazu

Nder lewru kam nde nay. Waazu.

Ekkitinolji di yimbe madata bana jum'aare bee alarba boo naa don? Doo kam *étude biblique* kadi. Doo kam feere feere.

Taska jannga kadi. Suɓa aayaare. Jannga janngita, inde bolle de mardaa haaje wolwugo.

Yowwaa, tefa *réfERENCE* feere haa *concordance* kadi. Sedda sedda miin kam mi winndan fuu. Jannga kadiboo. Janngita. Mi winnda bee Fulfulde.

Yowwaa, to winndi, don jannga kadi, lorna kadiboo. Nyannde waazu kam koo mi laaraay, mi janngi boo kal. Wolwa wolwa kadi don wara.

(20/2/1992)

161. Paster'en ɓaleeɓe aartuɓe

Woodi gooto haa Kusiri. Luc. Woodi gooto don haa Dagay. Mathieu Baa Jam¹⁰⁸. Woodi gooto haa Gider jotta. Feere kam luttaay. Eten Komla maayi haa Kusiri.

Yoo, Zakari Mbaydum boo maayi haa Saraare doo. Wodɓe boo timminaay janngirde. Wudini kadi. Waawaay bone. Wodɓe kam ndoggi haa hannde.

(20/2/1992)

162. Paster'en *église évangélique* haa lesdi woyla

Ndaa yam miin. Ndaa Aamadu haa Jaareengol. Ndaa Ngisata haa kommbi am doo, Matakam. Mbada kam ton haa Mokolo. Ndaa woodi *directeur Institut Biblique* doo heɓaay junngo tawon kadi. Siwaa. Sey laara tawon.

(20/2/1992)

¹⁰⁸ Dum Dagayjo.

163. Katesist'en bee *évangéliste*'en

Aide pasteer'en doon. Ammaa haa *église* amin kam duudataa.
Katesist'en¹⁰⁹ bee *évangéliste*'en don haa les pasteer'en.

(20/2/1992)

XVI. MISSION JAAREENGOL

164. Paster'en Nasaara'en wonnooɓe Jaareengol

Baaba Siwtuɓe donno haa Jaareengol. Muse Rule, Innglisjo.
Booyma doo, mission haa doo doo, Innglisjo marino.

Yowwaa, Innglis'en mari, nden, haa kawtal maɓɓe manngal boo ɓe
don ewna "*SUM*¹¹⁰ *International. Conférence* man ɓe don ngada
duubi jowi nde woore, ɓe ngadata. Duubi jowi fuu ɓe ngada nde
woore haa lesdi Nasaara'en ton kadi.

Suy, ɓe narri, ɓe ndokkita kuugal man haa branche suisse kadi.
Suisse'en mari kadi.

Suy, *Suisse*jo aartudo wargo wi'ete Estener kadi bee Muse
Esenberzhe'en¹¹¹. Kamɓe kadi aartuɓe wargo man. Aartuɓe kam pat
Innglis'en.

(20/2/1992)

165. *Roulet*

Roulet lorni Alkawal Kesal. O waawi Fulfulde. To o don wolwa,
mbi'aa o Pullo non. Mi anndi mo. O Innglisjo. O baaba siwtuɓe. O
fudɗi wadugo saare Jaareengol. O ekkiti haa Fulɓe ton. Kanko kam
o yidaano dakkootirgo bee asliiji godɗo doo, sey Fulɓe. O wi'i ngam
Fulɓe o wari. Kanjum sankitaay law. Ngam o suklani Fulɓe o
heɓaay maa. O heɓaay Fulɓe, o heɓaay asliiji godɗi.

Too, bana wargo maako non, o aarti o fudɗi bee asli godɗi kam, a
yi'i, koo baaba am'en boo naa nastanno daga law? Minin kam min

¹⁰⁹ < *catéchiste*.

¹¹⁰ *SUM* kam ba wi'go *Sudan United Mission*. Dum fotan bee *Mission Unie du Soudan*.

¹¹¹ Esenberzhe < *Eichenberger*.

ngara, min ndanyaa nder ton kadi. Kanko kam o sukli tefgo Fulbe, hebaay.

Suy kadi, baawo'en maako ngari, mbi'i doo kam jooda non kam wadataa, pudfi nastugo haa baamle kadi boo, baaba am wi'ata kadi.
(20/2/1992)

166. *Bible* winndaande bee Fulfulde

Innglisjo wayliti Linnjiila bee Fulfulde¹¹². Miin kam mi laari o waawi Fulfulde koo nde o jilli Fulfulde man bee Hawsaare. *Kasülke*'en ngari nganyi Fulfulde man sam. Be mbi'i: "Kaay, woodaay. Taa kuuwee bee man sam." Be maɓɓi dum nder akootiji. O fuddi o wayliti deftere, fasitiri deftere nde min mari jotta doo kadi. Minin kam min ngidaa accugo nde min mboowno. Min ngidi masin. Ammaa o hadi.
(20/2/1992)

167. Lopital Jaarengol

Yaake man doo, dum donno gal saare Bennge woni doo. Woodi cuurel peetetel nii, aarti haa saare station doo, cuurel peetetel nii don ton. Be lootan kuuduuje, ɓe kaɓɓa kuuduuje doo, nii nii'en goo. Suy, ɓe koori gal Bennge woni ton doo, gal lekol *biblique*. Lopital kam daga lekol *biblique* fuddi. Hitaande 1961 kadi.
(20/2/1992)

168. Rewɓe Nasaara'en joodiiɓe haa Jaarengol

Neli¹¹³ joodi haa neefi. Duubi noggas kam yottaay. Ammaa ɓadi. Erika, bee Ursula. Be duudɓe no.
(20/2/1992)

¹¹² Jonta kam koo Linnjiila bee Gizigaare boo don. Dum kam **Jumo'ay Nawayaj** wi'ete.

¹¹³ Neli, dum *Nelly Bickel*.

169. Piyer Bennge bee Madi

Piyer Bennge wari tawi min. Deydey haa hitaande min pudfi janngirde man non nii o wanngi. Guzok guzok guzok o wanngi. "Miin doo yidi kuugal." Bilkiiwa non. Teema daga wuro maako o hefi *baptême*. Gal *église* kanko kam iwde maako naa gal *Fraternelle Luthérienne*. Be don mbaɗa baptisma bee, haa fikkon, ndiyam wicci-wicci'en doo, nii non. O wari bee baptisma maako, o hefi timmi. O wari o yami kuugal.

Suy, ɓe ndokki mo. Ndaa o anndaa jannngugo, o anndaa Fulfulde. Dum hunnde non wari dari. O wi'i o yidi kuugal.

Suy, ɓe mbi'i mo: "Nden kam a laata bana aynoowo dammugal lopital kadi." Genndeeru no. To yimɓe nasta bee semmbe, sey, lorna ɓe, yerya ɓe ngurta. Kanjum wi'ete kuugal. Naa kuugal semmbe?

Haa o wara kam debbo walaa. Baawo kadi o huuci haa maɓɓe ton, o yehi o ɓanɗoyi wartidi bee ɓinngel debbo. Min mbi'i: "Doo kam a waddi taana naa?" O wi'i: "Naa debbo min kadi?" Yaake o wadi duubi nogga e jowi'en kadi.

Aran kam don joodi gal lopital doo, saare maako donno gal ton. O narri bee Nasaara. Nii kadi o joodi haa hannde.

O don huuwa kadi.

Yowwaa, ɓaawo don Madi boo ɓe kooci mo. Kanko boo o laari jurumdum maako ngam o rookanno haa luumo. O wara haa luumo altine doo rooka bee sawru bee cawal maako. Madi kam maaynaama.

Suy, Nasaara laari mo o wi'i: "Ngam wallugo mo kam min kooca mo bana gardi jemma."

Suy, ɓe kooci mo bana gardi jemma. To goddo wari bee nyawdo maako jemma, yaha haa maako kadi. Kanko boo o yaha findina *infirmier*-jo malla *mademoiselle*.

Madi¹¹⁴ kam Banannaajo. Konngola doɗɗon ɓe ndanyi mo.

(20/2/1992)

170. Fulfulde ansngol Piyer Bennge'en

Koo perdo maɓɓe boo, o wi'an bal¹¹⁵, diyam¹¹⁶, kishel¹¹⁷,

¹¹⁴ Madi maayi haa Jaareengol.

¹¹⁵ Bal < mbal.

¹¹⁶ Diyam < ndiyam.

¹¹⁷ Kishel < kusel.

taaba¹¹⁸. Be mbi'ata: "Mi yaa luumo mi yara bal."¹¹⁹ "Yaa Kidek, mi yara bal."¹²⁰

Naa nde maɓɓe nii, ɓe kaɓdaay naa?

(20/2/1992)

XVII. ÉGLISE AMIN

171. Église haa Moogazaŋ

Église walaa boo ɓe don moɓta haa les danƙi kadi, haa saare bi'eteedo Omaru nii. Bappa am. Babal *église* jotta. Tonton Nasaara waran asaweere fuu. Naa kanko feere maako boo. Baleeɓe wodee boo don. Nasaara mo fudɗi yahgo haa amin kam naa Estener innde maako? *Suissejo*.

Yowwaa, ɓaawo don, Zimirman tokki. Zimirman wi'i mi nasta lekol. Ammaa Estener dillino *congé*. Zimirman wari *remplace*-i mo kadi.

Yowwaa, kanko maɓɓiti janngirde. Estener warti. Zimirman dilli Mora. O maɓɓiti janngirde haa Jaarengol bee bi'eteedo Kasulke¹²¹.
(20/2/1992)

172. Gimi *église* haa Gayak

Ndottiijo *église* kam Aamadu Pierre mo duubi 47. Mo nasti haa Masihinko'en. Bikkoy mum fuu ɓe don tokka mo.

Yimɓe *église* wadɓan 250. Alat fuu ɓe don ngara. Be fudɗiran bee njamndi 8. Yaha haa yotta njamndi 10:30 malla 11. To lewru timmi, lewru wa'i balde didi dow man, malla tati, ɓe puɗɗan kiirtaari. Malla haa lewru feere boo yahan koo asaweere boo. Be wadɓan kiirtaari. Haa doo, ɓe mbolwan Fulfulde, ngam asli yimɓe jilli. Bananna, yimɓe hooseere, Mufu'en, ɓe faamataa Gizigaare. Doole ɓe wadɓan waazu bee Fulfulde. Giziga don yima. Gime don. Burna fuu Giziga'en. Innde *église* kam *église protestante*.

¹¹⁸ Taaba < taba.

¹¹⁹ Haanii wi'go: "Mi yaha luumo. Mi yara mbal."

¹²⁰ Haanii wi'go: "Mi yaha Kodek, mi yara mbal."

¹²¹ Kasulke < Kassülke.

Gooto yima, luttuŕe njaŕa. Waatoo, gooto kam gimoowo. Luttuŕe kam jaŕooŕe. G. kam dammnitinaadum gimoowo. J. boo rammitinaadum jaŕooŕe.

Ndaa yimooŕe tato:

(1) Mohamma *Martin* ŕii Jinngi bee Madam. Mohamma mari duuŕi 16. O *copi*-an gimi haa yimŕe non.

(2) Garga *Luc* mo duuŕi 17.

(3) Hamman *Joseph* mo duuŕi 27.

Jaŕooŕe tappan mbaggu. Dum **ganŕan** bee Gizigaare. Woodi mbaggu feere. Dum **ganŕan mecidek**, waatoo, mbaggu peetel, bee **ganŕan madidan**, waatoo, mbaggu mannga.

Ndaa gimi jeedidi di di meedaaka winndeego.¹²²

(1) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara

(G.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.

Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.

Jaŕŕaama, Yeesu.

(J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.

Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.

(G.) Yeesu danyaama hannde.¹²³

(J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.

Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.

(G.) Waynaaŕe yehi law.

(J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.

Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.

¹²² Mariko Inada tonngani yam *musique* gimi fuu. O yettaama.

¹²³

The image shows musical notation for the song 'Aleluuya, Yeesu wara'. It consists of four staves of music in a single system, all in treble clef. The first staff is for the G. part, with lyrics '(G.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara. Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.' The second staff continues the G. part with lyrics 'Jaŕŕaama, Yeesu.' The third staff is for the J. part, with lyrics '(J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara. Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.' The fourth staff continues the J. part with lyrics '(G.) Yeesu danyaama hannde.' The music is written in a simple, rhythmic style with quarter and eighth notes.

- (G.) Be tawi Mariyama.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Bee Yuusufu boo don.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) E alimleeko boo.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Be lori bee seyo.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Yeesu, ɓidɗo Alla.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Luttufe boo on ngara.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Worɓe fuu on ngara.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Rewɓe fuu on ngara.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Bikkoy fuu on ngara.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Alelu alelu.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Ngaree fuu haa Yeesu.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Yeesu laawol ngeendam.
 (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
 Jaɓɓaama bee warugo.
 (G.) Walaa laawol feere.

- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Sey jaŕbugo Yeesu.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Sey nder innde Yeesu.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Maŕten Jawmiraawo.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Maŕten Mo bee seyo.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Nder kam en fuu en kisan.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Jaŕŕaama, Yeesu.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Yeesu danyaama hannde.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.
- (G.) Mh mh mh mh mh.
- (J.) Aleluuya, Yeesu wara.
Jaŕŕaama bee warugo.

(2) En tokka wolde Alla

- (G.) A laari yimŕe.
- (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.

- (G.) Min yahan asama.¹²⁴
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Yesu wari duniya.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Derdiraaŋe, ngaree.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Banndiraaŋe, ngaree.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Yimŋe duniya, ngaree.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Duniya hunnde meere.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Haala Jawmiraawo.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Alla neli Yeesu.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Min yahan asama.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Yeesu wari duniya.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Banndiraaŋe, ngaree.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.
 (G.) Yimŋe duniya, ngaree.
 (J.) En tokka wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.

(3) Alla yidi yimŋe fuu ngara haa maako

(G.) Alla yidi yimŋe fuu ngara haa maako.

124



(G.) A laari yimŋe. (J.) En tokka. wolde Alla. Duniya, duniya, hunnde meere.



(G.) Min yahan asama.

- (J.) Ooho, o¹²⁵ yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) O yidi yimbe duniya.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Ngaree, tuubee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Yeesu yidi yimbe fuu.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Ngaree joodnde duudbe fuu.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Marbe hakkeji fuu.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Ngaree, taa loree sam.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Ngaree taa comee sam.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Seydan majjini yimbe.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Seydan wumni bernde.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Seydan wumni gite meeden.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Seydan sukki noppi men.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) O yidi yimbe fuu kalka.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Ammaa yimbe njaabaay sam.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Yeesu maabiti gite men.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Banndiraaɓe, ngaree lee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Soobiraaɓe, ngaree lee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Derdiraaɓe, ngaree lee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.

125



(G.) Alla yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako. Alla yidi yimbe fuu(J.) Ooho, o

- (G.) Onon yimbe duniya.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Ngaree tokken Yeesu men.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Accee suuno ceede lee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Accee suuno duniya lee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Accee suuno, wamen¹²⁶ lee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Accee suuno rewbe lee.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Yeesu yidi yimbe fuu.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Taa jaɓ fewre Seydaanu.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Alla jawmu yiide fuu.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Alla mari baawde fuu.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Alla jawmu endam.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Onon yimbe duniya.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Ngaree tokkee Yeesu lee,
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.
 (G.) Alla yidi yimbe.
 (J.) Ooho, o yidi yimbe fuu ngara haa maako.

(4) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.

- (G.) Yimbe duniya, annabi fewoobe don waajina.
 (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.
 (G.) Yimbe duniya.
 (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.
 (G.) Be don waajina.
 (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.

¹²⁶ Haanii wi'go ngamen.

- (G.) Aan, baaba am.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Aan, daada am.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Derdiraaŋe.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Soobiraaŋe.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Banndiraaŋe.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Keaddiraaŋe¹²⁷.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Yimŋe duniya.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Banndiraaŋe.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Daadiraaŋe.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Baabiraaŋe.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Yimŋe duniya.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Be don ngaazina.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Ngaree nanee.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Onon Fulŋe'en.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Onon Giziga'en.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Onon Mufu'en.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Onon Munndaj'en.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Yimŋe duniya.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.
- (G.) Be don waajina.
- (J.) Annabi fewooŋe don waajina.

¹²⁷ Haanii wi'go heeddiddiraaŋe.

- (G.) Annabi'en.
- (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.
- (G.) Be don waajina.
- (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.
- (G.) Taa laaru be.
- (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.
- (G.) Aleluuya.
- (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.
- (G.) Yimbe duniya.
- (J.) Annabi fewoobe don waajina.

(5) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe

- (G.) Wayyo wayyo wayyo wayyo wayyo, hakkeoji duufi duniya.
- (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
- (G.) Enen enen yimbe.
- (J.) Enen enen yimbe. Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.¹²⁸
- (G.) Seydan¹²⁹, Seydan don.
- (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
- (G.) Yeesu wari duniya.
- (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
- (G.) O sootti en fuu.
- (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
- (G.) Yeesu yari bone.
- (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
- (G.) Ngam yimbe duniya.
- (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
- (G.) Taa en nasta duniya.
- (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.

128

(G.) Wayyo wayyo wayyo wayyo wayyo, (J.) Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.

(G.) Enen enen yimbe. (J.) Enen enen yimbe. Hakkeoji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.

¹²⁹ Seydan < Saydaanu.

- (G.) Nyannde nyannde jango.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Enen enen *Flambeau*¹³⁰.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Onon onon *Lumière*¹³¹.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Jawmu jawmiraawo.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Tokken jawmiraawo.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Onon, bikkoy, ngaree.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Onon rewbe worbe.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Enen enen mawbe.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Ale aleluya.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.
(G.) Aleluuya amen.
(J.) Hakkeji duniya don caka kuude yimbe.

(6) **Yeesu a ra zilu**¹³². **Sawa**¹³³ **ta ka**¹³⁴.

- (G.) **Yeesu a ra zilu. Ka cin ta na**¹³⁵.
(J.) **Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka**^{136, 137}.
(G.) **Baadu**¹³⁸, **ka cin ta na.**

¹³⁰ Yeŋre worde nde suklanta haala Alla.

¹³¹ Yeŋre rewre nde suklanta haala Alla.

¹³² **Ara zilu** kam o don ewne.

¹³³ **Sawa** kam war.

¹³⁴ **Ta ka** kam gal doo.

¹³⁵ **Ka cin ta na** kam aan a nanataa doo.

¹³⁶ **Iram ta ka** kam en njaha gal doo.

¹³⁷



(G.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Ka cin ta na. (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.

¹³⁸ **Baadu** kam baaba am bee Muturuwaare. **Babaadu** kam baaba am bee Marwaare.

- (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Sawa¹³⁹, sawa.
 (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Mahadu¹⁴⁰, ka cin ta na.
 (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Sukumdu¹⁴¹, ka cin ta na.
 (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Ka cin ta na.
 (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Baadu, kolawa¹⁴². Yeesu a ra zilu. Ka cin ta na.
 (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Ka cin ta na.
 (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Mahadu, klawa. Yeesu a ra zilu. Ka cin ta na.
 (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. Sawa. I ram ta ka.
 (G.) Mahadu, kolawa. Yeesu a ra zilu. Ka cin ta na.
 (J.) Mangaldu¹⁴³, klawa.

(7) Yeesu don wara

- (G.) Yeesu don wara.
 (J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuddinbe. O wartan nder duule.¹⁴⁴
 (G.) Ngaree laaree lee.
 (J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuddinbe. O wartan nder duule.
 (G.) SoobiraaBe am.
 (J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuddinbe. O wartan nder duule.
 (G.) DerdiraaBe am.
 (J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuddinbe. O wartan nder duule.
 (G.) DaadiraaBe am.

¹³⁹ Sawa kam ngaree.

¹⁴⁰ Mahadu kam daada am bee Muturuwaare. Daadadu kam Marwaare.

¹⁴¹ Sukumdu kam derdam.

¹⁴² Kolawa kam doggu.

¹⁴³ Mangaldu kam ba wi'go binngel gorko am.

¹⁴⁴



(G.) Yeesu don wara.

(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuddinbe. O wartan nder duule.

- (J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Yeesu don wara.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Yeesu wari kam.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) O wartan nder duule.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Taa a numa lee.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Wara tuuba lee.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Ngaree tuubee lee.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Dum beldum. Yeesu don warta.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Mi nani Yeeso lori kam.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Yeesu yewni yam.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Ngaree haa Yeesu.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Soobiraaɓe men.
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(G.) Haleluuya
(J.) O wartan, o hoosan nuɗɗinɓe. O wartan nder duule.
(10/2/1991)

173. Gimi *église* haa Moogazaŋ

Nyannde 19, lewru *janvier*, hitaande 1992, mi hokki waazu haa *église* Moogazaŋ. *Église* don haa babal ngal bappaanyo am maranno. Ndaa ko ɓe ngimani min haa nder *église* maajum. Jonta, ɓe ewnoto dum Moogazaŋ 1.

(1) Joodaago les kosde Yeesu¹⁴⁵

Joodaago les kosde Yeesu
 beldum ɓuri kuuje fuu.
 Pelled boodngel ɓadi Yeesu.
 Ton mi yidi siwtaago.
 Joodaago les kosde Yeesu
 mi don numa balde am.
 Haala maako ka mi wanyno.
 Jonta nanngi ɓernde am.¹⁴⁶

Joodaago les kosde Yeesu.
 Ngam o hisni yonki am,
 kiita am dow hoore maako.
 Miin mi heɓi yaafuye.
 Joodaago les kosde Yeesu.
 Mi don tora baaba ma.
 Ko mi yidi fuu o hokkan.
 Ngam o yidi yam masin.

Allah Baawdo, jogam junngo.
 Taa mi majja laawol maa.
 Hokkam hakkiilo e semmbe.
 Haa mi huuwa muuyo maa.
 Hokkam gite taa mi do"o.

¹⁴⁵ Bee Innglis kam, innde maajum: "What a friend we have in Jesus." Charles C. Converse winndi ngol hitaande 1868. Bee Furanse kam: "Quel ami fidèle et tendre."

¹⁴⁶

Joodaago les kosde Yeesu beldum ɓuri kuuje fuu.
 Pelled boodngel ɓadi Yeesu. Ton mi yidi siwtaago.
 Joodaago les kosde Yeesu mi don numa balde am.
 Haala maako ka mi wanyno. Jonta nanngi ɓernde am.

Lootu bernde laaɓɗum tal.
Ruuhu nasta haa nder bernde.
Kulol wurta acca-mmi.

(2) Yeesu a ra zilu.

- (G.) Yeesu a ra zilu.
(J.) Yeesu a ra zilu.
(G.) A vulu¹⁴⁷ siyfa¹⁴⁸ ngesete¹⁴⁹.
(J.) A vulu siyfa ngesete.
(G.) Ar duniya zuy a n ta¹⁵⁰ ¹⁵¹.
(J.) Ar duniya zuy a n ta
(G.) Məzlay¹⁵² a ra gam¹⁵³ gwad¹⁵⁴ tan¹⁵⁵.
(J.) A sa lomam¹⁵⁶ gwad tan.
(G.) Məzlay məsupam¹⁵⁷ kuli hay.
(J.) Məzlay məgam gwad hay a lomam zuy ta.¹⁵⁸
(G.) A supam setene hay¹⁵⁹.
(J.) Atə məzlay məsupam gwad tan hay.
(G.) Atə mezli¹⁶⁰ hay.

147 A vulu kam o don hokka maa.

148 Siyfa kam yonki.

149 Ngesete kam ba wi'go haa abada

150 Ar duniya zuy a n ta kam ba wi'go: Har duniya, jam woodaa.

151



(G.) Yeesu a ra zilu. (J.) Yeesu a ra zilu. (G.) A vulu, siyfa ngesete, (J.) A vulu siyfa



ngesete. (G.) Ar duniya zuy a n ta.

152 Məzlay kam yimɓe.

153 Gam kam ɓe don mbada.

154 Gwad kam huunde.

155 Tan fotan bee tan Fulfulde.

156 A sa lomam kam ɓe keɓan.

157 Məsupam kam tefooɓe.

158 Məgam gwad hay a lomam zuy ta kam ba wi'go: Wadooɓe huunde doo
ɓe heɓataa jam.

159 A supam setene hay kam ba wi'go: ɓe don tefa ginnaaji'en.

160 Mezli kam worɓe.

(J.) **Yeesu a ra mawa**¹⁶¹ nge hela me keŋe hay.¹⁶²

(G.) **Mə supam gwad hay a sa lomam avu.**¹⁶³

Baawo gimol mi barkidini yimŋe. Mbi'-mi: "Mo"ere Jawmiraawo Yeesu, bēe yiide Alla Baabiraawo, e kawtal Ruuhu Ceniido wondan bee meedfan daga jonta haa abada abadin. Amen."

(3) Njaaren wolde Alla

(G.) Ngam kuugal maajum Alla ewni en.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Diga Yuusufu wari, waddi wolde Alla.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Alla halfini min kuugal, en ngaaajina Linnjiila.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Ngaree tuubee law, ngam Alla ewni on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Taa ngudinee wolde Alla.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Yuusufu waddi kuugal. Alla ewni on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) On derdiraaŋe, Alla yoŋan on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Dum fuu dum kuugal Alla. Alla ewnan on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Onon bikkon Alla, Alla yoŋan on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Onon daadiraaŋe, Alla yoŋan on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Onon keaddiraaŋe¹⁶⁴, Alla yoŋan on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Ngam kuugal Alla, Alla ewni on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

(G.) Onon baabiraaŋe, Alla ewni on.

(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

¹⁶¹ **Mawa** kam loro.

¹⁶² **Nge hela me keŋe hay** kam ba wi'go hoocugo nuddinŋe.

¹⁶³ **Avu** kam yiite.

¹⁶⁴ **Haanii** wi'go heeddiddiraaŋe.

- (G.) Onon banndiraaße, Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Taa comee sam. Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Bikkon, taa comee sam. Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Alla halfini en kuugal. Taa Seydan sarga en.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Taa wudinee¹⁶⁵ wolde Alla. Alla yoban on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Yuusufu maßiti laawol kuugal.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Baabiraaße e headdiraaße, Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Onon derdiraaße, Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Bikkon adilinko'en¹⁶⁶, Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Tokken balndol Alla. Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Nder kuugal Alla, Alla yoban on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.
(G.) Onon banndiraaße, Alla ewni on.
(J.) Njaaren wolde Alla.

Timmoode kam yimdan bee "Mhmh" nonnon.

Be ngimdi bee **gojogod**¹⁶⁷ bee **hadom**¹⁶⁸ bee **malalaw**¹⁶⁹.

(4) En seyan bee goonga. Yeesu loran

(G.) Seyo manngo ngam Alla neli Almasiihu.

¹⁶⁵ Haanii wi'go ngudinee.

¹⁶⁶ Adilinko kam ba wi'go nuddinße.

¹⁶⁷ Gojogod kam faandu.

¹⁶⁸ Hadom kam leggal.

¹⁶⁹ Malalaw kam mbulku.

- (J.) En seyan bee gonnga. Yeesu loran.¹⁷⁰
 (G.) Seyo manngo ngam Alla neli Almasiihu.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Alla neli pukara'en, ngam yimbe ngara tuuba.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Alla yidfi duniyaaru. Yimbe, ngaree tuubee.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Ngam nuddinki moodon nder duniya.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Alla neli ngam meeden. Manten Jawmiraawo.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Ngam be nuddina Alla bee gonnga.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Taa on lora, on tuuba. Yeesu don wara.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Nuddinbe kam seyi, ngam Yeesu don lora.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Daadiraabe, on nuddina. Yeesu don wara.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Yimbe duniya, tuubee lee. Bee gonnga, Yeesu don lora.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Daadiraabe, tuubee lee. Yeesu don lora.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Accee suuno duniyaaru. Yeesu ewni on.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Accee suuno worbe. Yeesu don lora.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Accee suuno rewbe. Yeesu don lora.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (G.) Onon bikkon, accee suuno njeenu.
 Bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
 (J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.

170

(G.) Seyo manngo ngam Alla neli Almasiihu.
 (J.) En seyan bee gonnga Yeesu loran.

- (G.) Yeesu maɓɓan dammugal dow ɓikkon muudum.¹⁷¹
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Soobaaɗo am, war tuubu. Ngam Yeesu don lora.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Nyannde janngo, Yeesu hiitan on.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Koo bee bone mon; ngaree lee.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Yeesu don taaska pallel maajum.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Diga ɓooyma, soobaaɗo, taa wadu hakke.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Ndikka a tora Yeesu. Ngam haa o hooɗa maa.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) A nuddina Yeesu. Yeesu hooɗan maa.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Accu suuno duniyaaru. Maɗten Alla meeden.
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.
(G.) Yeesu maayi ngam maada haa dow gaafaangal.¹⁷²
(J.) Aleluuya, bee gonnga, Yeesu don wara.

Timmoode kam yimɗan bee “Mhmh” nonnon.

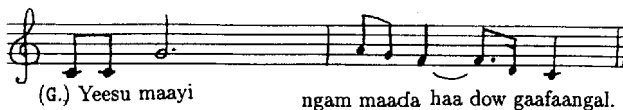
(5) Walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.

Fuɗɗoode kam fuɗɗira bee “Mhmh.”

- (G.) Walaa godɗo mo anndi.
(J.) Walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.

¹⁷¹ Dum kam ba wi'go: “Alla nastinan ɓikkon haa laamu maako. Ammaa, O accan yimɓe ɓe nuddinaay mo.”

¹⁷²

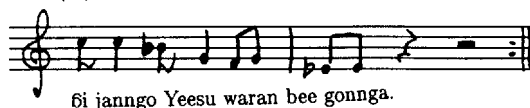


- Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.¹⁷³
- (G.) A anndi naa?
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A tokka lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A wara lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A numa lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A tuuba lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A tuuba lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A tokka lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A nani naa?
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) En tuuba lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
- (G.) A tokka lee.
 (J.) Gonnga, walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde.
 Koo to faɓɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.

173



(G.) Walaa godɗo mo anndi. (J.) Walaa godɗo mo anndi nyannde. Koo to faɓ-



ɓi janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.

- (G.) A wara lee.
(J.) Gonnga, walaa goddfo mo anndi nyannde.
Koo to fa66i janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
(G.) A numa lee.
(J.) Gonnga, walaa goddfo mo anndi nyannde.
Koo to fa66i janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.
(G.) Aleleeya.
(J.) Gonnga, walaa goddfo mo anndi nyannde.
Koo to fa66i janngo Yeesu waran bee gonnga.

Timmoode boo timmidan bee "Mhmh" nonnon.

(Moogazaŋ, 19/1/1990.)

RÉSUMÉ: THE NARRATIVE OF A GIZIGA PASTOR

I. THE STORY OF THE BIY MARVA

1. Biy Marva

The chief of the Marwa group of the Giziga-speaking people¹ is called Biy² Marva³ used to live in Zokok, Marwa. Marwa is the Ful'beized form for Marva.

(4/3/1986)

2. The inhabitants of Marwa

The people of the lineages of Degen, Mægərmam and Mundumtere lived in Marwa. They made Biy Marva their chief. Biy Marva did not possess the land. He was only a chief. The Degen people came from Bagirmi, Chad. The others came from the south.

(4/3/1986)

3. The Dugoy people and others

Before the coming of the Ful'be, there were Giziga-speaking people in Dugoy, Ko'dek, Konngola, and 'Balaza. Each group was referred to by the name of the village where they lived.

(4/3/1986)

¹ The language of the Marwa group of the Giziga-speaking people is classified as follows: Northern Giziga in section 4, A division, South subbranch, Center branch, Chadic languages, Afroasiatic phylum. (Seignobos and Iyébi-Mandjek)

² Biy < buy. Buy means a chief.

³ According to an oral tradition, Marwa is a personal name. Biy Marva (1690-1705) was succeeded successively by Biy Arne (1705-1720), Biy Luwa (1720-1735), Biy Ajala Mikey (1735-1750), and Biy Babaraṅ (1750-1765). Bi Babaraṅ was succeeded by Biy Leta (1780-1795), who was the last chief of Marwa, and by Biy Biri who became the chief in Chakijebe. Biy Leta was succeeded in Kakiaw successively by Biy Babaraṅ, Biy Akada, Biy Mbaldha, Biy Massay, Biy Degar, Biy Azumko, and Biy Yuguda. Biy Biri was succeeded in Chakijebe successively by Biy Birwa, Biy Usmaana and Biy Drum. (Eldridge: 391)

4. The origin of the Marwa people

The Marwa people came from Bagirmi, Chad, via Balda. They then settled in Digir and Yammbaram, and moved to Zokok, Marwa.
(4/3/1986)

5. Muturuwa

Muturuwa is the person who started that clan.
(4/3/1986)

6. Mijivi'ng

A hut or a room is called viŋ. Thus, Mijiviŋ means someone who thatches a hut.
(4/3/1986)

7. The Gudul Mufu

Some people refer to the Gudul Mufu as the Gudur Mufu. They had a chief in the Gudul village. The chief was powerful. He did not come out of his compound without any special reason. So the Giziga used to say to someone who did not come out of his concession: "Are you a chief of Gudul?"

Gudul is located near Moko'ng. The chief in Moko'ng used to be controlled by the Gudul chief. The Gudul used to have a lot of land from Moko'ng to the area next to Meri. Because they scarify themselves on the face, they look like the Giziga. Their language sounds like Giziga.

The Gudul Mufu and the Mandara share a border at Cuvuk.

According to tradition, some Gudul Mufu went to Muturuwa and settled there a long time ago before the coming of the Ful'be.
(25/2/1993)

8. *The Giziga-speaking people*

The present-day Giziga-speaking people living in Muturuwa, Mijivi'ng, Marwa and surrounding areas came from the same family. They came from Bagirmi in Chad.

The Giziga people were there before the arrival of the Mundang people from Leere, Chad.

(4/3/1986)

9. *The origin of the Giziga-speaking people*

Before the Giziga-speaking people came to the area surrounding Marwa, they stayed in Balda. From Balda they saw the Marwa mountain, and came to Marwa via Yammbaram. They arrived in Zokok, Marwa.

(10/1/1993)

10. *The Giziga*

The Giziga was a small lineage among those living in Marwa. Now the word Giziga is used as a general term to represent all the Giziga-speaking people. Formerly each group was called by the name of the group.

The Marwa people entrusted the group called Giziga with the chief's chair. There is a story about the first Giziga man:

A Giziga hunter lived near the little hill of Mojogomoyel which stands right in the middle of the city of Marwa. Whenever he caught any game, he gave it to the Marwa women. The women told the other men about the hunter. The Marwa people were in trouble. Their chief had died without staying long on the chief's seat. So they asked this hunter to become their chief, and tried their luck with him. Fortunately the hunter's lineage lasted. This was the beginning of the ruling family in Marwa. They form the core of the Biy Marwa people.

(4/3/1986)

11. The Biy Marva

The chiefs of the people of Marva were new comers. They got the chief's seat. Now they do not have any mountain with which they identify themselves. There are mountains with which people identify themselves: Buloore, Məgərməm, Kozleŋ, Degen, Mundumtere, etc.

(4/3/1986)

II. HOW THE FUL'BE GOT RID OF THE CHIEF OF MARVA

12. The first Ful'be who came to Marwa

When the Ful'be first came to Marwa, they stayed in Dow Maayo. The Ful'be married Giziga women. They mixed with the inhabitants. The Giziga say that the Ful'be came out of anthills.

(27/1/1992)

13. How the Giziga people had to leave Marwa

The Giziga stayed for a long time in Marwa before the arrival of the Ful'be. The Ful'be and the Giziga lived peacefully for a while. Then there were skirmishes between them. The Ful'be called Moodibbo Muhamman Damraka⁴ for help. Moodibbo Damraka chased Biy Marva out of Marwa. Biy Marva moved to Moogaza'ng, and stayed there for three years. The Ful'be pushed him to Caki Je'be. He then moved from Caki Je'be to Mandara.

⁴ Moodibbo Muhamman Damraka reigned from 1801 to 1846. He was succeeded successively by Muhamman Saali (1846-1896), Aamadu Rufaa'i (1896-1901), Abdurraamaani Suu'di (1901-1908), Muhammadu Koyraanga (1908-1909), Muhammadu Saajo (1909-1914), Muhammadu Koyraanga (1914), Muhammadu Saajo (1914-1943), Muhammadu 'Daayru (1943-1959), Ibraahimu (1959-1961), Muhammadu (1961-1966), and Abdurraamaani (1966-). (Eldridge, 388)

The Germans came to Diamaré province. After the death of Biy Marva, Usmaana succeeded him, moved to Dulek, and stayed there until after 1960. The Ful'be installed one of their slaves called Babe as a chief in Dulek. There are Giziga village heads in Kaliyaw and Hulum.

(4/3/1986)

14. The Giziga ministers in the Ful'be court

Some ministers⁵ in the Ful'be court in Marwa are Gizigas who did not leave Marwa. They stayed there and give counsel to the Ful'be chief. They choose the new chief.

(4/3/1986)

15. The Giziga live by mountains but not on top of them

When the Giziga were attacked by the Ful'be horsemen, they ran into the mountain and fought back. But they are not mountain dwellers like the Mufu. They are rather plain people.

(4/3/1986)

16. Stone hedge

There is a stone hedge that encircles the Moogza'ng mountain. It is made of stones. When the Ful'be came and attacked the Giziga, they killed the Ful'be there.

(10/1/1993)

⁵ *Namely, kayagamma'en.*

III. THE GIZIGA AND OTHER ETHNIC GROUPS

17. Some ethnic groups

Some ethnic groups known by the Giziga are called in Giziga as follows: the Kanuri, Mifkin; the Mandara, Wandala hay; the Shuwa Arab, Baɗawoya hay; the Mundang, Mbana hay; the Tuppuri, Doore hay; the Masa, Bananna hay; the Gider, Baynawa hay; the Sara, Sara hay; the Kotoko, Kotoko hay; the Musgum, Muzuk hay; the Hurza, Hurza hay; the Muyang, Muyaŋ hay; the Ma'da, Maɗa hay, the Mboku, Mboku hay; the Meri Mofu, Meri hay, etc.

(25/2/1993)

18. The Ful'be

A Pullo is called Mbur Plata. The Ful'be are called Plata hay. A white man is called Mbur babaraŋ.

(4/3/1986)

19. The Ful'be and the Giziga

At first the Ful'be and the Giziga were on good terms. The Giziga gave The Ful'be a place to stay. They were their guests.

When the Ful'be became rooted and strong, they betrayed the Giziga.

The Ful'be drove the Giziga out of Marwa with tricks.

The Giziga say if you make friends with the Ful'be, it is because you cannot get a Giziga friend.

The Moslem Giziga marry Ful'be women. The non-Moslem Giziga do not marry Ful'be women.

When a Pullo man comes and sits near the compound, they purify the place with fire after he is gone. The villagers can then sit on the spot.

The Giziga do not eat together with the Ful'be. They despise each other.

(7/2/1992)

20. The Kanuri, the Mufu and the Mandara

The Kanuri did not come to the Giziga very long ago. They are newcomers. The Giziga knew only the Ful'be and the Mufu. The Giziga have a good relationship with some of the Mufu.

They do not have a good relationship with the Mboku in the Mandara mountains.

The Mandara and the Giziga are good friends. The Mandara were Islamized long ago.

(7/2/1992)

21. A Pullo is a bad omen

The Giziga do not like to see a Pullo with a clear skin. If one meets a Pullo, he lets him go.

A Pullo is a bad omen.

(7/2/1992)

22. Bad luck

There are people of the lineages called Mustəda and Movo who are considered to have a bad luck. There was no intermarriage between them and the rest. Nowadays few people respect this taboo.

People believe that socializing with the Ful'be brings bad luck.

(6/1/1992)

23. Despising other people

The Giziga despise all other peoples except white people. They despise the Ful'be, the Mufu, and the Masa.

They say the Ful'be are worthless, and the Masa are wanderers who do not wear clothes.

(10/1/1993)

The Giziga despise the Ful'be, and the Ful'be despise the Giziga.

(25/2/1992)

24. Sense of shame

It is shameful when someone does something that should not be done. The Giziga insults such a person.

If one farts in front of his in-laws, it is shameful. If one steals something in his village, it is shameful. If they arrest him, and take him to the chief, it is shameful. Shame is mesem.

There is a saying: "Mesem a kida ngos tu hur." This means that shame killed a pregnant woman. That is to say, although she wanted to beg for something, she was too afraid of being ashamed, so she did not beg, and died as a result.

(10/1/1993)

25. The Mufu and the Giziga

The Giziga do not like the Mufu. The Mufu eat dogs. The Giziga do not eat dogs. When the Giziga give the Mufu something to eat, they wash the container clean after the Mufu use it. A Mufu person used to take a calabash for eating and drinking with him.

Now they socialize with each other. A Mufu is called mbur Mufu.

(7/2/1992)

26. The Mufu in Moogaza'ng

The Mufu asked for permission to come and stay in Moogza'ng in 1939. They then entered Moogaza'ng and have been staying there. Before 1939 there were no Mufu there.

(23/1/1992)

The Mufu came from the Mandara region to Moogaza'ng. They asked for the permission to stay with the Giziga there. There was no intermarriage between the Mufu and the Giziga.

(4/3/1986)

27. *Joking relationship between the Giziga and the Mafa*

If a Giziga finds a Mafa man wearing clothes with a burnt spot on them, he strips him of the clothes. He says the clothes belong to him.

(10/1/1993)

According to the tradition, the Giziga and the Mafa have a joking relationship. But I do not know about it. The Giziga in Lulu might have that relationship with the Mafa. Lulu is on the way to Dagay. It is southwest of Dagay. Otherwise the Giziga cannot have contact with the Mafa. There are the Mufu between us.

(25/2/1993)

28. *The Musgum*

The Giziga and the Musgum had a good relationship before the coming of the Ful'be. After their coming, they had no time to socialize with each other. They had to be separated by the Ful'be. A Musgum person is called Muzuk.

(7/2/1992)

29. *The Sao*

The Sao used to live along the Logone river, according to the elders. But I do not know about them very well.

According to the tradition, the Sao were giants. Two Sao persons, one in Marwa and the other in 'Bogo, put food in the middle and stretched out their hands and ate it from the same platter. Their bracelets were big enough for us to go through them. When we were children, we found the Sao bracelets while we were cultivating the field, or when we went to the mountain.

We dug out the Sao jars. They were as hard as iron. A blind person called Mburwaka in Moogaza'ng told us about the Sao people. He could not go to the field, and he told us these stories.

(25/2/1993)

30. Zumaya

In Marwa there were the Zumaya people who spoke Giziga. When they moved to the present-day Zumaya area, there were another people.

(4/3/1986)

The Zumaya used to live in the east of Marwa. They had a strong chief. Biy Marva moved them to the present day Zumaya region. Biy Marva told them: "Go there and settle there. You eat too." That's how they are called Zumaya. Zumaya means "Eat, you too."

The Zumaya land is in the east beyond Kaa'yeewo. There are changes in the world. The Giziga left Marwa. The Zumaya were Islamized and lost among the Ful'be. Some of the Zuyama people moved to the Mindif area. Those who were absorbed by the Ful'be lost the Giziga language.

There is a village of the chiefdom called Zumaya. There is a rubbish hill there called Kitikila Zumaya. This is the origin of this rubbish hill. When the Zumaya arrived there, there were already other people who owned that land. After having settled there, the Zumaya people collected all the rubbish, and heaped it in front of the chief's compound. The hill kept growing and became like a mountain.

There was a dispute between the Zumaya and the local people over who settled there first. The Zumaya people showed the rubbish hill and insisted that they came there first for their rubbish hill was big and old. Thus the local people were cheated by the Zumaya people.

(25/2/1993)

31. The Biy Magamak rubbish hill

In Godola, there is a rubbish hill that looks like that of Zumaya. The hill is called Kitikila Biy Magamak which means the rubbish hill of the cat chief. The hill is there even now.

(25/2/1993)

32. *Europeans*

The Europeans came here recently. They live in the water. Their houses are in the water. That's why they are white. All the Europeans came out of water. They are called Mbur babaraŋ.

(27/1/1992)

33. *Enemies and love rivals*

An enemy is called misi dugun. A love rival is called macakar.

(7/2/1992)

IV. *THE GIZIGA COMPOUNDS*

34. *Family compounds*

A family compound is called hay in Giziga. If you want to have a hay, you have to build huts and have a wife. Among the Giziga, a man has a hut, and a wife has a separate hut. A hut is called viŋ. When children reach the age of twelve years, they do not stay in their mother's hut. Boys stay with brothers in a hut. Girls stay with sisters in a hut.

A kitchen is called hudul. A good wife stays in the kitchen, and works there. She is not supposed to leave the kitchen without a special reason.

A hut through which one enters a compound is called jugur. Sometimes men spend the evening with their friends there.

A corn bin is called durgud. A small corn bin is called zuŋ durgud, and is built in a hut. One may store anything in it. They make a divider called juŋur.

A shelter is called balak or palak. When someone is courting a girl, he takes his age mates to the girl's compound, and makes a shelter with them for the girl's mother.

How to encircle your compound depends on your strength. Some people make a mud wall around the compound, and others put a fence made of sorghum stalks. A poor person leaves it without any fence.

A big water jar is called grawal. Some people plant medicinal and magical herbs called matay around the jar.

There is a hut used for an ancestor ceremony called hay kuli or viŋ ŋgi kuli. They cook everything to be used in the ceremony there. The man who carries out the ceremony and the woman who prepares the food enter the hut. When everything is prepared, they take it out. They bring it to the corn bin which is in the center of the compound. The head of the family carries out the ceremony.

After the end of the ceremony, they eat whatever can be eaten, and drink whatever can be drunk.

In the kitchen, they keep food such as flour, beans, dried leaves, fermented hibiscus cakes, dried meat, and so forth. The fireplace is called liwis. A grindstone is called ngurvuŋ. A fermented hibiscus cake called menjereŋ is prepared by the Mufu.

People spend the evening outside the hut.

They keep dogs in the compound to watch and wake up the head of the compound if anything happens. When the dogs bark, the head of the compound comes out with a stick or knife and checks why they are barking. It may be a thief, leopards, or hyenas coming into the compound.

(20/2/1992)

35. A hut for domestic animals, with no doorway

The Mufu confine a calf in a hut without a doorway, but with a little hole through which they feed and water the calf. The calf cannot see the sunlight until the day of the festival. During the festival the grown animal is slaughtered. The Giziga do not have this custom.

This kind of hut is called Gezləŋ.

(4/3/1986)

36. The visitor

When one sees a visitor coming from afar, he is ready to receive him. He welcomes him.

When he arrives, the family gives him water mixed with flour of sorghum and peanut, if any.

When the visitor sits down, they exchange greetings. The visitor eats with a child. A Giziga man is too shy to eat with adults. It is easier for him to eat with a child.

When he leaves, the head of the family holds the visitor's stick, and accompanies him a long way.

(25/2/1992)

37. The one released from prison

When someone is released from prison after the expiration of his term and comes home, he does not enter his compound until a ceremony is performed. His father brings some water and sorghum flour. He mixes it, and spills it on the feet of the person. He then lets him come into the compound.

(23/2/1992)

V. THE SKY, THE EARTH, AND THE BUSH

38. Why the sky is high

A long time ago, the sky was not as high as now. It was as low as a sunshade. When women pounded millet, they did not lift their pestles up high. A woman lifted it up and hit the sky. The sky left them. Since then the sky is high.

(27/1/1992)

39. How the sun travels

The sun rises in the east, and sinks in the west. After it sinks in the west, it goes into the water. The water boils. The people called Gurum, cook food the boiling water.

The sun turns into a ram. The ram runs to the east. The ram appears as the sun from the east the next morning.

(27/1/1992)

40. The people living under the ground

It is said that there are people living under the ground.

(27/1/1992)

41. The turtle under the ground

A big turtle lives in the water under the ground. When it gets angry, it causes an earthquake to the people on the earth.

(27/1/1992)

42. Lunar eclipse

When a lunar eclipse takes place, one fills a big calabash with water, and puts a smaller calabash upside down on the water. He beats the smaller calabash, and shouts until it is finished. One is not supposed to be sleeping.

(6/1/1992)

43. Solar eclipse

When a solar eclipse takes place, one has to go home as soon as possible. He sacrifices an animal. He thinks the end of the world has come, and waits to die.

(6/1/1992)

44. Hyenas

There are hyenas. When one forgets about them, they come and attack donkeys. They eat the flesh even before they are completely dead. They do not attack men if the men bother them. Unlike leopards, once they find prey, they never leave it.

(20/2/1992)

45. *Leopards*

There used to be many leopards. I saw many of them with my own eyes. They finished all my goats in one day. No Mufu lived in the mountain near Moogaza'ng. When night came, the leopards appeared just like goats. Now they live in the middle of the hill far away from Moogaza'ng.

There are sorcerers who turn into leopards and eat men. There are clans of sorcerers.

Leopards are bigger than dogs. They look like cats. They can run fast. When they fell their victims, they drink the blood.

(20/2/1992)

46. *Elephants*

Elephants have never reached Moogaza'ng. They come to the outskirts of Marwa. They once came to the Meri area, and went through Tokommber. They hurt and jkukked many people. Some people tried to drive them away, and the elephant caught them, and stepped on them.

About four hundred elephants came. All the dry-season millet fields in Muturuwa and Kaa'ele were destroyed. They came from Central Africa. They are not from Waza national park. They did not go beyond Minndif. They caused people a lot of damage.

(20/2/1993)

47. *Tree names*

*Valavad means *Khaya senegalensis*. Gaye, *Azadirachta indica*. Akuku, *Adansonia digitata*. There is a village called Valavad because of the *Khaya senegalensis* tree they have there.*

(4/3/1986)

VI. FOODS AND DRINKS

48. Sorghum

The most important sorghum is galaŋ. This corresponds to njigaari in Fulfulde. There are such sorghums as: gagazaŋ, bulbaasi, andariya, urzlaŋalaja, mejejel, zlarawoy, safra, majeeri, burgu, etc.

(7/2/1992)

49. Edible leaves

There are edible leaves as follows: arasl, Hibiscus Sabdariffa; ambaka, Balanites aegyptiaca; azŋak, Vigna unguiculata, Vigna catjang Walp; luŋur, Celtis integrifolia; matkavay, Cassia mimosoides, etc.

(7/2/1992)

50. Alcoholic beverages

There are only a few kinds of alcoholic beverages: clear beer, fermented porridge, and something between the porridge and the fermented porridge. The one between is called dalay nga daf.

(1/2/1993)

51. The preparation of beer

Women prepare beer for drinking and sale. It was important on the occasion of communal labor called hulum.

(23/1/1992)

They prepare beer whenever they like. There is a Mufu couple who take turns preparing beer. They are exceptional.

(25/2/1992)

52. Beer

First they sprout the sorghum grains. They dry them and grind them into flour. They boil some water and put the flour in it. They cook it.

Then the next morning they filter it. They boil it again until it bubbles. They remove dirt from the liquid. They boil it again.

They put some yeast in it.

*Some people put some flour of the *Khaya senegalensis* bark. It gets bitter.*

(1/2/1993)

53. Fermented porridge

This is how they prepare the fermented porridge:

They pound sorghum grains and put them in water. They keep them there for two nights, until they all sprout.

They put them on the mat and dry them in the sun. They grind the grains, and make flour. They put the flour in the water. The dough gets sour overnight. They cook the dough, and make sour porridge.

They put the porridge on the mat, and cool it. They then put the porridge in a big pot, and mix it with water. They bring yeast and sprinkle it on the porridge. They keep it in the pot for a few days. The porridge gets fermented.

When it is fermented, it makes a noise. They then filter it.

(1/2/1993)

54. Something in between the porridge and the fermented porridge

Something between the porridge and the fermented porridge is called dalay. They make porridge or use leftover sorghum ball. They bring some yeast and mix it with the porridge or the sorghum ball. It is also called muzum paalel or the beer in the gourd.

(1/2/1993)

55. The Moogaza'ng market

There used to be a Thursday market at Moogaza'ng. They used to slaughter about ten cows. There is no more market there. The Moogaza'ng market was big. The Gayak market was open on Sunday.

(25/2/1992)

56. How one catches rats

The Giziga catch two kinds of rats to eat: mocod, *Lemniscomys barbarus Nigeriae* Thomas and munduwan *Cricetomys gambianus olivae* Dollman. Mocod has a lot of fat, and is much more delicious than any other meat. They make a case called akor, which is a small case like a basket to trap mocod rats. They peel the cornstalks, plait the peel, and make the case. This trap has an opening in one end, but the other end has no exit. They set it on the way where rats walk. The rats go into the trap and stay there. The best season to eat munduwan is a dry, cold season.

(23/1/1992)

57. How one catches fish

In Moogaza'ng there was a lot of water even in the dry season. Naturally there were many fish in the river. People catch fish and bring them to the market for sale. The water in the river was finished around 1958.

They used to catch fish with a fishing net or a javelin. There were fish called mobolo, malalay, muray, manjadey, awed, angrekenreke, etc.

(23/1/1992)

58. *There used to be a lot of water in Moogaza'ng*

There used to be water throughout the year in Moogaza'ng. Even in March, people used to catch fish in the river. The water gradually disappeared before the independence in 1960. It is really dry now.

(4/3/1986)

59. *Frogs*

People catch three kinds of frogs: ages, merlek, and akraṅ. They sold ages in the market. Merlek and akraṅ are edible. Merlek is small, but akraṅ is large.

(23/1/1992)

60 *How one catches birds*

People catch birds with birdlime. They put birdlime on branches, and leave the branches near the water where many birds come. Birds stick to the branches. When they catch them, they eat them.

There are such birds as ajer, Quelea quelea, dangura, etc.

They also hunt guinea fowls, and collect guinea fowl eggs in the bush.

(23/1/1992)

61. *Hunting*

People go down to the bush in Ko'dek, Yaga, Malam Peetel, 'Bagalaf, or Julguf, and hunt game with dogs. There are such game as hares, antelope, guinea fowls, etc.

No elephants were found.

(23/1/1992)

62. *Bow and arrow game*

Children play a mock battle with toy bows and arrows. Sometimes this develop into a real fight among adults.

(23/1/1992)

VII. *BODY AND CLOTHES*

63. *Scarification*

Many of the Kanuri and the Mandara, and some of the Ful'be get scarification on their faces. It is not common among the Giziga.

In Moogaza'ng, Abba, a barber from Palar did the scarification. Children insulted me so much for not having scarification on my face that I accepted it. I had an awful time after he was scarified.

(23/1/1992)

64. *Plaiting hair*

The Giziga women know how to plait hair very well.

(25/2/1992)

65. *Sandals*

The Giziga buy sandals from the Ful'be. They do not make sandals. Tarak means sandals.

(10/1/1993)

66. *Shirts without sleeves*

A shirt without sleeves is called dankici. Trousers are called sirla.

(10/1/1993)

67. *Women's clothes*

The Biy Marva women never wore leaves. Women's clothes are called zana.

(10/1/1993)

68. *Penis case*

The Giziga men did not use a penis case called gogor. The Mundang used to use them. Perhaps the Giziga who are mixed with the Mundang in the Minndif area might have used one.

(1/2/1993)

VIII. *AGRICULTURAL CALENDAR*

69. *The rainy season*

The rainy season starts from July. It ends sometime in September. It is called viya.

(27/1/1992)

70. *Dry and cold season*

The sorghum ripens during the dry and cold season. This season is called sifi.

(27/1/1992)

71. *The dry season*

The dry season called hen pas starts from March. It ends sometime in May.

(27/1/1992)

72. *From planting to harvesting*

Before the first rain in the season, one prepares the field.

When the first rain comes, one takes out sorghum grains, and leaves them in the sun. Women then pound the grains, and remove the unnecessary things from the grains.

The head of the family slaughters a red chicken, and sows the grains.

A week later, men go to the field and soften the earth. They keep weeding the field.

A few weeks later, they remove the weeds in the field. This weeding is called juuya in Fulfulde. When the weeds come back, they pull them out.

When the sorghum ripens, they slaughter chickens, and carry out a ritual.

After doing a ritual of slaughtering a red chicken, they cut down the stalks, and heap them in the field. They then remove the ears.

They then thresh the grains.

After the head of the family performs another ritual they can start eating the new grain.

(27/1/1992)

73. *Cultivation of the field*

I learned how to cultivate a field from my father.

The Giziga plant the rainy season sorghum, peanuts, cotton, okra, Hibiscus Sabdariffa, beans, etc.

One starts working in the field when he is seven years old. He learns sweeping the field, sowing seeds, weeding weeds, and harvesting.

The Giziga put sorghum grains in a gourd called vala, and sow seeds in June with a sowing tool called bebe.

They weed a few times.

They cut the sorghum plants from the bottom, and leave them in the field. Later they cut the ears. They leave them in the field and thresh them.

Traditionally their main crop was the rainy season sorghum, which is called daw galaŋ or red sorghum. The muskwari sorghum is called daw Plata or Ful'be sorghum.

Zlaraway or cerge in Fulfulde was brought in by the Mufu. The Giziga did not know it.

The Giziga do not plant maize very much, although they have known it for a long time.

(23/1/1992)

74. Communal labor or hulum

If someone cannot cultivate his field by himself, he prepares some beer, and asks for help. His fellow villagers come and finish it in a day. Sometimes forty or fifty people join in the communal labor.

When one threshes, he asks for help. The Giziga collect grass for thatching the roof with communal labor.

Now this good tradition is disappearing.

(23/1/1992)

75. The work during the dry season

When they bring the grain back to their compound, it is already the dry season.

There are things to do during the dry season. Men collect grass for thatching huts. Weavers weave cloths. Women spin cotton into thread. There are many kinds of minor work.

The Giziga do not like to work for the Ful'be.

(27/1/1992)

76. Dry season sorghums

The Moogaza'ng people know how to make fields for dry season sorghums from a long time ago.

(20/2/1993)

77. *Men's role is cultivating*

A man should cultivate a field, and grow sorghum to feed his family. The Giziga are good farmers.

In the dry season men make money by weaving, trading, slaughtering, etc.

(27/1/1992)

78. *Women's work*

Some women spin. Some prepare beer and sell it. Some sell fish in the market. This is how they make money.

Women also work in the field.

(27/1/1992)

79. *The Hibiscus Sabdariffa festival and the big festival*

When the plants become edible in the rainy season, the Biy Marva people first hold a festival called Arasl Biy Marva 'the Hibiscus Sabdariffa festival'. The rest of the Giziga group start eating the first vegetables of the season.

Two weeks later, they have a big festival called muguzlum Biy Marva in August during the rainy season.

(4/3/1986)

80. *Sedege*

Before they start cutting the sorghum stalks in the field, they carry out a small ritual called sedege, which corresponds to sadaka in Fulfulde. This takes place in September.

(4/3/1986)

81. Festival

After harvesting the sorghum, the Giziga slaughter animals and cook sorghum beer, and celebrate the festival called muguzlum for a day or two.

(4/3/1986)

82. The cow festival

To celebrate the year-end, the Giziga kill cows. The next morning they divide the meat, and share it with the whole family. They carry out a ritual of thanksgiving and joy. This ritual is called kəda sla.

(4/3/1986)

IX. OCCUPATIONS

83. Weavers

The Giziga men weave during the dry season. A strip of cotton cloth is called gabaga. Cotton is called gəgəmay.

The Ful'be bring the threads and the Giziga weave for them.

(25/2/1992)

There were weavers. They used to live in Godola, Ce'be, etc. They were free men. A woman never weaves. Women spin threads. They made clothes and caps with cotton bands woven by these people.

(10/1/1993)

84. Tailors

Although the Giziga know how to weave, most of them do not know how to sew clothes. The Ful'be sew clothes for them.

Some Giziga know how to sew a shirt, but it was very difficult for them to make a cap. Thus, they say: "If there is a cap, where would you like to go?" That is to say, if one can get a hat, there is no need to look for clothes.

They used to have their cloth dyed in the dyeing pits.

(25/2/1992)

85. Barbers

The barbers use a razor. They shave and scarify with it. A barber is called muciha.

(25/2/1992)

86. Slaughterer

There is no lineage that specializes in butchery. A butcher is called misli ishe.

(25/2/1992)

87. Meat dealer

If one has enough money, he buys an animal, slaughters it and sells the meat. If not, he works for other people.

(27/1/1992)

88. Bonesetter

A bonesetter treats bone fractures, sprains, etc. A bonesetter is called mudiya vu. A bonesetter works in the field and sets a broken bone when called upon.

There were bonesetters called Buuba Bərwaka in Moogaza'ng, and Gajalu in Kooseewa. Now they are dead.

(25/2/1992)

89. Herbalists

There used to be good herbalists who knew medicinal herbs.

My father's uncle called Moklasa was a good herbalist. He knew medicine to cure skin disease caused by mycosis, ichthyosis, and xeroderma. He learned about medicinal plants in Mandara.

Sometimes a father does not transmit his knowledge to his son. When someone dies, the knowledge disappears.

(25/2/1992)

90. Diviners

Diviners use stones, and chickens. They tell their clients what to do, what not to do, when to go on a trip, when to build a hut, whether to marry, etc. to avoid trouble.

(25/2/1992)

When someone gets sick, his or her family go to a diviner. The diviner tells the reason why he or she is sick, and what to do. A diviner is called mukursuhan.

(25/1/1992)

91. Theft

A Giziga man cannot steal without a Pullo's help. The Ful'be teach the Giziga how to steal.

(25/2/1992)

92. The Giziga thieves

There is a group of thieves among the Giziga. In this group a woman insults her husband if he does not steal things. She says: "Everyone steals. But you cannot steal." When he gets angry, he goes and steals things.

These people are said to be living in Lulu in the west of Marwa.

(7/2/1992)

93. *Entertainers*

A professional entertainer is considered to be a beggar. There are professional cawal players among the Giziga.

They play it on festive occasions. There are no great players.

(22/2/1993)

94. *Blacksmiths*

The Giziga do not have any blacksmiths.

A long time ago a blacksmith worked for the Giziga, but he could not get anything from them. He got angry and left. Since then there have been no blacksmiths.

There are blacksmiths among the Ful'be and the Mufu.

(25/2/1992)

95. *Wanderers*

There are wanderers who do not stay in one place. It is said they wander because they put their hands in a vulture's nest.

(22/2/1993)

96. *Commerce*

Few Giziga become merchants.

(25/2/1992)

X THE GIZIGA LANGUAGE

97. *The Giziga language*

They say the most important dialect is that of Marwa. The weak point of the Marwa dialect is that most of the speakers are Islamized, assimilated by the Ful'be, and have forgotten the Giziga language. Thus authentic Giziga is only spoken outside of Marwa.

The Marwa dialect and the Muturawa dialect are slightly different. For example,

Marwa	Muturawa	Meaning
hakaw	kaw	<i>a snake</i>
jomo	ngama	<i>a friend</i>
həraŋ	həraŋŋa	<i>a head</i>

(4/3/1986)

98. Greetings

In the morning one says: “Kahəŋ zii kwa?” This means “Did you pass the night well?” Or one says: “Ka da zii ko?” This means “Are you fine?” To more than one person one may say: “Kə hənam zii kwa?” This means “Did you pass the night well?” Or “Kə hənam mbrəke?” This means “How did you pass the night?” Some greetings are as follows:

“Ngos hay zuy zuy?” This means “Are women fine?”

“Zri hay taa dazuy?” This means “Children are there?” Zuy literally means cold. Actually it is used to mean in good condition.

To express thanks one says “Sise.” “Sise ŋkum” to more than one person. “Sise hada” means “Thanks a lot.” Sometimes they thank themselves saying “Sise miya.”

Sometimes, one says “Vudik zii kwa?” This means “Is your body healthy?” The answer is “Vuɖu zuy.” This means “My body is healthy.” Or one may answer with “Zuy dagay.” This means “Still fine.”

In the afternoon, one says “Ka vam pas zii kwa?” This means “Did you spend the daytime well?”

In the evening, one says “Gam kuɖ zii kwa?” This means “Did you spend the late afternoon well?”

(4/3/1986)

99. *Eulogy*

When someone does something good, they admire and eulogize him. For example, one says A vlu siif haa ngesete. This means: "May Alla give you an everlasting life."

Sometimes, they sing the person's name in the song.

Sise, a bunu ti zi ngi kiri is considered to be a good blessing. This means: "May God wash you with a dog's feces."

(10/1/1993)

100. *Abuses*

An abuse is called zivu.

Sometimes they sing the name of a person, and insult him in the song.

Mokwanj means a child who commits a forbidden thing.

Misimurga means a useless poor person.

Mavay means a bastard.

Muhul means a thief.

Mazla ngos means an adulterer.

(10/1/1993)

101. *Slaves*

There are slaves. Although slaves exist nominally, they do not work for their masters as before. A slave is called beke, and a female slave, beke mongosoj.

When a Giziga man gets angry at a Pullo, sometimes he calls him beke and insults him.

(10/1/1993)

102. *Innuendo*

If someone wants to insult someone to his face, he pretends to criticize himself, and let the person he wants to criticize hear it. In doing so, he is actually abusing the other person. An innuendo is not considered good.

(10/1/1993)

XI. *FOLKTALES AND RIDDLES*

103. *Folktales*

A folktale is called mamba in Giziga. Adults tell stories to children at night from February to April. When it starts raining, they stop telling stories.

Sometimes one tells a story after having received a gift.

A story is mamba. Stories are mamba hay. Telling a story is gi mamba.

(10/1/1993)

Giziga stories start with the formula: "Mamba mamba. Kula a viŋ but vra dee asi balak." This literally means "A tale, a tale. The tale goes into a hut, and comes out to the space under a flat-roofed open shade."

Stories end with the formula: "Kicikar babaraŋ culek." This literally means "A white chicken, culek."

People tell stories only at night.

Mamba means something surprising, or a miraculous thing.

(4/3/1986)

104. *A squirrel is a trickster in folktales*

Ayew means a squirrel in Giziga. The squirrel is a trickster in folktales. Motkoyo means a hyena. The hyena plays the role of a stupid glutton.

(10/1/1990)

105. "The firefly and the simpleton"

A firefly and a simpleton became friends. The simpleton was a big man. The firefly always threatened the simpleton. The simpleton was afraid of his friend. Although the simpleton tried to hide himself, the firefly always found him and made fun of his friend.

A simpleton is called mbur mijinjigwid.

(4/3/1986)

106. "How men got sorghum"

A long time ago, a hyena had some sorghum grains. It went to the field, and planted them. After harvesting, it was too lazy to bring back sorghum grains to its village. A man found the grains left in the field, and brought them back to the village. Since then men have had sorghum grains.

(27/1/1992)

107. "How meat turned into stones"

A long time ago, the stones were meat. People picked up the meat and cooked it. People were not supposed to put salt on the meat. A woman broke this taboo, and put salt on the meat. From that time on the meat turned into stones.

(27/1/1992)

108. *Dogs used to thresh millet*

A long time ago men criticized a dog, saying it only ate and did not work. The dog got angry and began to thresh millet with its friends.

While they threshed, they sang a song:

"Does a dog thresh millet?"

"Why not."

"Does a dog thresh millet?"

Does a dog thresh millet indeed?"

"Why not?"

(27/1/1992)

109. "The dog and the squirrel"

A dog and a squirrel met a hyena in the bush. Thanks to the squirrel's trick, the dog and the squirrel escaped from the hyena. The dog said the squirrel had made it ashamed. Since then, the dog chases the squirrel.

(27/1/1992)

110. Proverbs

There are a lot of proverbs. They are called Mi ngu hur mi. This means the language hidden in the language.

(10/1/1990)

111. Riddles

I do not know any riddles.

(10/1/1990)

Only women know riddles.

(7/2/1992)

XII. God and spirits

112. Biy mulvuŋ

God's name is Biy mulvuŋ. Buy means a master. Mulvuŋ means the sky.

(27/1/1992)

113. The creator of the sky and the earth

Biy mulvuŋ created the sky and the earth. The Giziga believe in God, and gods for their rituals.

(27/1/1992)

114. First human beings

Allah created the first human couple. A human being is called mbur tətəraŋ. Tətəraŋ means black.

(27/1/1992)

115. Evil spirit called Koroleme

Koroleme has only one leg, one hand, one eye, one nostril, etc. It appears only at night. It kills men.

(6/1/1992)

116. Satan

Satan is called Setene. Setene appears with a small body like a child. Or he shows up with an animal appearance. He can change into anything he likes. The head of spirits is called Maliyam. Maliyam is male.

There are male, female, adult, and infant spirits just as in the human world.

Spirits live in the bush. There are special places for spirits to live, such as in shrubs, in rocks, or in the hollows of trees. It is forbidden to visit them.

There are people who can talk with spirits.

(6/1/1992)

117. Spirits

The Giziga recognize the existence of various spirits. The head of the spirits is Maliyam. Each spirit lives in its own dwelling place. Only some elders can communicate with them.

(6/1/1992)

118. Masahay

Masahay or elders divine with chickens. When one wants to set out on a trip, he asked the masahay to see his luck. He listens to what the masahay says. says.

(6/1/1992)

119. Treatment of mentally ill persons

The masahay treat mentally sick persons. They know what to do with spirits. They can communicate with spirits.

(25/2/1992)

120. Misi tir

Someone who eats people's souls is called misitir. Misitir sends a fire, and lets it fly at night. Wise men called masahay watch the movement of the fire at night. Bappa Mi Muc in Godola was good at finding misitirs. He told the misitirs not to eat human souls. If they did not stop, he performed a ritual and found the one who ate human souls.

(25/2/1992)

121. Man-eaters

They say that there are man-eaters among the southerners. A man-eater is called muzuma muzlay.

(7/2/1992)

XIII. MUSICIANS AND MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS

122. Musicians

A musician begs, and plays the cawal. The musicians play on the days of festivals, offerings, and memorial ceremonies for the dead. There are no other kinds of professional musicians. There are only cawal musicians among the Gizisa.

(25/2/1992)

123. Musical instrument called cawal

One uses cawal when dancing. In any festive occasion, one plays cawal. Professional cawal musicians are called mähərək hay mæzli dimis.

A cawal is an iron ring to which many small rings are attached. When you holds it with your hand and shake it, it makes a sound.

(23/1/1992)

124. The big drum with a single drumhead

No one plays the big drum without any special reason. Even on festival days they do not play it. They play it only on the day of a memorial ceremony for an important dead person. Only masahay has a big drum. There was one in Moogaza'ng.

No one beats it for no reason. When an important person dies, they beat it. There are special players. The masahay keeps it, but does not play it.

A big drum is called badak. It is long, and has three feet under it.

(22/2/1993, 25/2/1992)

The masahay keeps a long drum with one drumhead. There are people who knows how to beat the drum. They stand on a wooden mortar, and beats it. They use it only on special occasions, for example at the death of important persons.

(22/2/1993)

125. Big drum with drumheads on both sides

The side they beat is larger than the other side. If one beats it, it informs you of a news, for example, the news of a war.

There is one such drum in Godola.

(22/2/1993)

126. Drums

A long time ago any elder knew how to make a drum.

(25/2/1992)

Anyone can have a drum. There are few drummers. One can hear the drum at festive occasions or at a communal labor.

(22/2/1993)

127. Harp

The Giziga do not have a harp. But the Mufu do. The Giziga have a fiddle called kaaku.

(25/2/1992)

128. Fiddles

If one knows how to make a fiddle, he does it. They play it for pleasure.

(22/2/1993)

129. Horns

Unless there is something special, they do not play the horns.

130. *Flutes*

There are flutes made of a cornstalk, and horns. Young people play the flutes or horns and run. When they carry sorghum, they play it. While a few people play it, the others work.

(22/2/1993)

131. *Calabashes and musical gourds*

The Giziga used to beat calabashes at the time of a lunar eclipse. Now they play the calabashes for amusement.

There are musical gourds called jemtewe. The women play it when they are married.

(10/1/1993)

XIV. FROM BIRTH TO DEATH

132. *Twins*

No one likes twins. People are afraid of them.

If the twins get angry with someone, that person will get sick.

When twins are born, people carry out a ritual. Relatives from both the father's and mother's side participate. They choose a woman from the mother's side, and a man from the father's side. The woman and the man run around the compound in opposite directions, and compete to see who enters the compound first. Then they do the ritual.

They treat each twin equally.

There is a rite for twins.

(25/1/1992)

133. *Agrippa*

An agrippa is called mudisal. Sal means a foot or leg.

(25/1/1992)

134. *A boy baby born with one testicle*

The Giziga think having only one testicle is bad. They give the baby to the Ful'be or take it to its mother's family.

It does not do any harm. But they are afraid of it.

(23/2/1992)

135. *A baby born with upper teeth*

The Giziga do not like babies born with upper teeth. They used to give these babies to the Ful'be.

There are people who chisel the upper teeth with a stone until the lower ones come out.

(23/2/1992)

136. *A person with a sixth finger*

I have never heard of anyone with a sixth finger.

(23/2/1992)

137. *Naming ceremony*

When a child is born, they do a naming ceremony. The child does not go out of the hut for seven days. They set out an earthenware pot. They kill a red chicken, put some sand in the pot, and spill the blood of the chicken on the sand. They put the feathers around the pot.

Then they go into the hut and bring out the baby. They shave the baby's hair, and name the baby.

(6/1/1992)

People use a red rooster for the naming ceremony. On the seventh day after the birth of a baby, they bring an earthenware pot, break the bottom and make a hole. They put it upside down on the earth. They fill it with sand. They kill the rooster, and drop the blood on the pot. They bring out the baby from the hut, and name the baby.
(10/1/1990)

138. Giziga personal names

One can understand the meaning of Giziga personal names. For example, Kitikil means a dumping ground. Someone who is born after dead elder siblings.
(25/1/1992)

Azumakay means they ate me. Zum means to eat. Kay means me. I have never experienced famine. Although I do not know the names of famines, they exist. Famine is called may.
(22/2/1993)

The Giziga do not have a special name for a firstborn. One names a child according to the special incident of the year. If someone has joy or trouble, he commemorates it. If grasshoppers come, he names his child Jaray meaning a grasshopper.

If someone becomes a president, he uses the president's name. For example, Dogol (< de Gaulle).

Some male and female names are the same.

(10/1/1993)

139. Puberty

When a girl reaches the age of 12, 13, or 14, she will get married. When she has an unmarried elder sister, she does not get married first. If her unmarried elder sister is crippled, the villagers carry out a mock marriage on the dumping ground. Then the girl can get married.

As for a boy, when he reaches the age of 20, he takes a stick and goes out to look for a girl. This courting stick is called ganday ngu bubud.

When a boy finds a nice girl, he visits the girl's compound at night around eight or night o'clock, and greets her parents. Her father gives them a hut. The boy courts her there.

He keeps visiting her family with gifts. He does a service to her family, such as thatching a roof, cultivating the field, etc.

(25/1/1992)

140. Marriage

A boy starts courting by buying some local tobacco leaves for the girl's father. After giving the tobacco leaves, he keeps courting the girl. When she accepts him, she tells him when to come and marry her.

The boy goes to the girl's compound at night with his companions. He brings her back with him to his compound. When they reach his compound, his companions tell the villagers: "We went to pull such and such mountain." That means they went to bring back a wife from such and such location.

Until the bridegroom gives his new bride a gift, she does not drink or eat anything.

A few days later, they slaughter a goat to feed the bride. They say that when she eats the meat, the thorns that have stuck to her soles on her way to meet the bridegroom will come out.

A few days later, they slaughter another goat, and send the meat to the bride's aunts. The bride goes back to her compound, and comes back to the bridegroom's compound.

The villagers make a new compound for the newlyweds outside the bridegroom's father's compound. Now they live an independent life.

A year later, the couple visits the bride's family.

The bride's father carries out a ritual. Then they drink beer.

(25/1/1992)

The Giziga are polygamous. Some people marry about forty women in order to have people to cultivate their fields. Someone with many children was powerful.

(10/1/1990)

141. Sandals and shoes

There are Giziga shoes called gugudu. One buys them for the girl he is courting, at the time of one of the Giziga festivals.

(25/2/1992)

142. Song sung by wooers

When wooers thresh sorghum grains for the girl's family, they sing this song:

"Thank you, young men on the right-hand side.

Thank you, young men on the left-hand side."

"Haa haw yaa."

"Thank you."

"Haa haw yaa."

*"If we were not young men,
who would come and thresh the sorghum grains?"*

"Haa haw yaa."

(23/2/1992)

143. Siblings

A sibling is called sukumdu. There is no marriage between sukumdus nor between their children.

There is inmarriage among the members of Biy Marva.

If two people have the same grandparents, or great grandparents, they cannot marry.

A Giziga person never marries his uncle's daughter. It is considered to be mesem, or a shameful thing. It is forbidden. If one violate this rule, he will be kicked out of his village.

(10/1/1993)

144. Adultery

When someone commits adultery, bad luck comes to the family. Adultery is called madama. That is why people avoid adultery.

A woman enumerates all the men with whom she has slept, before she gives birth to a baby. If not, she cannot give birth.

(25/1/1992)

145. The person caught by a magical spell

Magical spells works. A woman who has slept with men other than her husband confesses the names of the men.

No one can hide adultery among the Giziga.

(10/1/1993)

146. Funeral

When great men die, the people kill an ewe, and cover the body with the raw hide. For ordinary people, they cover the body with a cloth.

They bury the body outside the village or at the foot of a hill.

They dig a hole as deep as three to four meters, and make a horizontal tunnel in the hole. If someone dies of leprosy, dropsy, etc., they bury them simply.

When an important person dies, they beat a big drum. If they beat a drum, they know the reason.

(25/1/1992)

147. Bunahaŋ

*When someone dies, the soul goes into the *Momordica charantia* Linn. shrub. The soul stays there till someone carries out a sacrifice ritual for him or her. First, they do a ceremony called bunahaŋ for three days. Bunahaŋ means washing hands. During this ceremony they consume food and drinks. Then they kill chickens and use them to practice divination.*

They choose a day according to this divination, and sacrifice animals. On the day of the sacrifice, people eat, drink, and dance. Sometimes they fight with each other.

After this sacrifice, the soul of the dead person can join the ancestors.

(6/1/1992)

148. Shroud

They use a big boubou as a shroud.

The in-laws of the dead person bring a lot of cotton bands. But they do not bury the dead with cotton bands. The dead person prepares a boubou while he is still alive. They keep the boubou in the corn bin.

After the family washes the body of the dead, they put the boubou on the dead body and lay it down. They make a big basket and put the dead person inside. They ask the dead person for the cause of death. They say goodbye to the person.

The body goes out of the compound. If someone killed him, he will show who did it. If not, he goes directly to the grave. They perform a funeral rite. They then put him in the grave.

When they perform the ceremony of offering, all the villagers gather together. The last funeral rite is called cufa. The beginning of the rite is called bunahaŋ or washing hands.

(10/1/1993)

149. Possession

Sometimes a dead person's soul comes back and possesses a person. The soul comes to participate in an offering to the dead.

When a soul possesses an old woman, she behaves like a young person. This soul is called Mukæsl.

(25/1/1992)

150. *How people know the cause of someone's death*

When someone is killed by a man-eater called misitir, by poison, or by an evil spirit, he will come back to this world and tell people who is the culprit.

After a ritual, the young people who carry the dead body run very fast till they reach the place where the dead person was killed. No one knows why these young people can run as fast as that.

Sometimes this causes a conflict between the family of the one who is suspected of being the culprit and the family of the dead person.

I did not see it with my eyes, but heard it from the villagers.

(10/1/1990)

XV. *CHURCH AND I*

151. *"I'm a Marwa man."*

When someone says: "Ya mbur Marva" which means "I'm a Marwa man," I am proud of Marwa.

(4/3/1986)

152. *My family*

The names of my six ancestors and my siblings. My father is Astanko. Astanko's father is Gida'ng. Gida'ng's father is Adiya. Adiya's father is Madva. Madva's father is Kerere. Kerere's father is Birwa. My siblings are Ndujja, Faa'dimatu, Jebba, Yuguda, Danna, Guddal, and Maaliki. I got his Fulfulde name from a Ful'be woman. My mother's family is of Musgum origin.

(4/3/1986)

153. *My father was a butcher*

My father was a chief butcher. He used to slaughter domestic animals. When he cut the throat of an animal, he took a filet and a

stomach, and sold the rest. I was tired of meat.

(23/1/1992)

154. *Moogaza'ng, my birthplace*

When my father lost his first wife, he married my mother. She was sixteen years old. My parents moved to Dugoy, and stayed there. They then went back to Moogaza'ng. I was born in Moogaza'ng.

I went to school in Dogba when I was around ten years old. I lived in the school. I stayed in the school till I was sixteen or seventeen years old. Then I went to the Bible School at Jaarengol.

(7/2/1992)

155. *How I married my wife*

When I was seventeen years old, I married my wife. My parents did not like me to marry early. But my uncle persuaded my parents, and said there was no problem with it. I stayed with my wife in my parents' compound until I turned eighteen. Then I went to the Bible School in Jaarengol with her. I purchased my plot in Jarengol in 1970.

(20/2/1992)

156. *Assimilation and Fulfulde*

It is very difficult to find someone who cannot understand Fulfulde among the Biy Marva. Many Biy Marva people have Fulfulde or Islamized names, although some Christians carry Christian or European names.

Some of my children have Fulfulde names such as Hammadu, Diija etc., some Christian names such as Daniel, Jonathan, etc.

(4/3/1986)

157. How I became a pastor

I was born in Moogaza'ng. There were Ful'be neighbors who were Moslems. My father had friends among the Moslems, and heard about Islam. My father told me about Islam when I was about 12 or 13 years old. I started thinking about life and death.

The people from the church of the Sudan United Mission visited my village on the way from the Mufu village home around 1955. They told me the story of Adam and Eve.

My paternal uncle asked them to come to Moogaza'ng regularly on Sundays. My uncle was one of the first persons who was baptized. I entered the Bible School in Jaarengol in 1960. After finishing the school I was sent to a bush church in Kooseewa.

After having served for three years in Kooseewa I came back to Jaarengol to add to my knowledge of the Bible. I studied in a special school for another four years.

Then I went to Meri and worked there. After Meri I came back to Godola.

Then I came back to Dow Maayo, Marwa. I had been working there.

(10/1/1990)

158. Bible School in Jaarengol

There was one schoolroom in the Jaarengol compound. There were more than ten students. There were students from the Baptist church and the Evangelical church. I belong to the Evangelical church.

The Sudan United Mission in Cameroon was created later.

When I finished my four-year course, I was sent to Kooseewa. I worked there for four years as a young missionary. Then I came back to Jaarengol and finished the cours complémentaire to be able to preach in French, which took three years.

I learned with Kulla, Luc, etc.

When I finished the cours complémentaire, I had two children.

Then I worked in Meri for four months. Then I stayed in Zakaliyaw for four months. I came back to Jaarengol and stayed there for a year.

Then I went to Dow Maayo, Marwa, and have bee working there. My children Diija, Daniel, Pauline, Barnabas, and Gabriel were born.

(20/2/1992)

In the Bible School at Jaarengol, they first taught us about the book of Genesis. We also learned about the book of Joshua.

Then we began the New Testament. We started from the Gospel according to Mark, the Gospel according to Luke and other Gospels. Then we studied the Acts of the Apostles, the letters of Paul, other letters, and Revelations.

I like the book of Genesis and the Acts of the Apostles very much, because there is profound knowledge in them. The book of Genesis is the most important book which teaches us how things were created, how human beings came into the world, and how they are leaving the world. I learned about it, and later I taught it.

F.W. Taylor, an Englishman, translated the book of Genesis in Yola, Nigeria.

(20/2/1992)

159. Ordination as pastor

Not all the graduates of the Bible School are ordained. They are examined and observed carefully by the European missionaries, and the serious ones are chosen as candidates for future pastors.

I was ordained as a pastor in 1971 at the Dow Maayo church. Elders including Pastor Kurt Öestertag and Pastor Hans Eichenberger attended the ceremony.

(20/2/1992)

160. Sermons

I gave four sermons a month. There were Bible classes on Wednesdays and Fridays.

I prepared my sermons using a Bible concordance. I wrote the notes in Fulfulde. I read it repeatedly.

(20/2/1992)

161. The birth of the first pastors

Here are some of my colleagues who became the first pastors in Northern Cameroon: Luc in Kusseri, Mathieu Baa in Dagay, etc. Some of them are dead.

(20/2/1992)

162. Fellow pastors in the north

There are such fellow pastors as Aamadu in Jaarengol, Ngisata, a Mafa who is living near me, and Mba'da in Mokolo. The director of the Bible School in Jaarengol is not ordained yet.

(20/2/1992)

163. Catechists and evangelists

There are assistant pastors. But there are not many in our churches. Catechists and evangelists are under the pastors' supervision.

(20/2/1992)

XVI. MISSION STATION IN JAAREENGOL

164. *European pastors in Jaareengol*

Mr. Roulet, a Swiss man, opened the Jaareengol mission. Mr. Roulet grew up in Rhodesia and belonged to the English branch of the Sudan United Mission. His wife was English. Mr. Roulet was there. He was the father of twins. He died after his retirement. The English branch of the Sudan United Mission opened a station in Marwa.

At the International Sudan United Mission conference held every five years, they decided to assign the Jaareengol mission to Hans Eichenberger in 1950.

Then Swiss pastors such as Mr. Steiner, H. Eichenberger, etc. came to Jaareengol.

(20/2/1992)

165. *Mr. Roulet*

Mr. Roulet translated the New Testament into Fulfulde. He could speak Fulfulde as fluently as a Pullo. He was a Swiss and grew up in Rhodesia. He was the first European who built a house in Jaareengol. He learned Fulfulde there. He had twin children. He tried to convert only the Ful'be, but he could not get even one convert.

The missionaries who came there later found that it was not clever to make the same mistake as he, and started going into the non-Ful'be villages, as I heard it from my father.

(20/2/1992)

166. *New Testament in Fulfulde*

The English missionaries translated the New Testament into Fulfulde. It was called Alkawal Kesal Jabuura, published by the Societe Biblique: Cameroun-Gabon at Yaoundé in 1968. When Kassülke, who belonged to the Baptist mission, and other missionaries came to Jaareengol,

they stopped students from using it. They started a new translation. Later it was published as Deftere Allah.

(20/2/1992)

167. The Jaarengol hospital

When I was a student at Jaarengol, the hospital was on a different spot in Jaarengol. It was a little house. The hospital was there in 1961 when the Bible School was open.

(20/2/1992)

168. European women in Jaarengol

Nelly Bickel has been staying for almost twenty years. Erica and Ursula should be mentioned. There were many women.

(20/2/1992)

169. Pierre Bengue and Madi

When Pierre Bengue⁶ came to Jaarengol, we were in the first year of the Bible School. Probably he was baptized in his own village. He did not go to school at all. He was a Lutheran. When he came, he did not know Fulfulde. He looked for a job.

The missionaries hired him to stand in front of the hospital entrance and keep order in the line of visitors waiting to enter the hospital. He was strong enough to stop those who tried to break into the hospital.

When he first came to Jaarengol he was not married. Later he brought a young wife from his village when he was twenty-five years old. He kept a good relationship with the Europeans.

Madi used to beg in the market place. The Europeans sympathized with him, and hired him as a night watch. When a sick person arrived at the hospital at night, he went to wake someone up. Madi

⁶ *Pierre Bengue and Pastor Siddi Silas had a intimate relationship almost like "joking relationship".*

was a Massa man born in Kongola.

(20/2/1992)

170. Fulfulde spoken by Pierre Bennge and his people

Pierre Bennge is a Sara. All his fellow Sara people speak Fulfulde words with similar accents. Even the best one pronounces mbal which means beer as bal, ndiyam which means water as diyam, kusel which means meat as kushel, and so forth. Instead of "Haa mi yaha luumo, mi yara mbal" which means I am going to the market to drink some beer, they say "Mi yaa luumo mi yara bal".

(20/2/1992)

XVII. GIZIGA CHURCHES

171. The beginning of a church in Moogaza'ng

They started a church under a sunshade at Omaru's compound where the present church stands. Omaru was my uncle. A European missionary and his African assistants came there every week. The first missionary was a Swiss man called Steiner.

Some time later, Zimmermann came. He told me to enter the Bible School at Jaarengol.

Zimmermann opened the school. When Zimmermann went to Mora, Kassülke replaced him.

(7/2/1992)

172. Hymns sung in the Gayak protestant church

The elder of the Gayak protestant church is Aamadu Pierre, 47 years old. All his children are baptized.

The membership of the Gayak church is about 250. The Sunday service starts at 8:00 a.m. There is a holy communion once a month. They use Fulfulde for prayer. Most of the members are Giziga. There are other members also, such as Masa, Mufu and so forth. Those people cannot understand Giziga.

All the hymns were sung antiphonally. The main singer sings one or more lines, and all the rest repeat the same verse.

There were three main singers: Mohamma Martin Jinngi, 16 years old, Garga Luc, 17 years old and Hamman Joseph, 27 years old. Mohamma copied songs from other people. None of the songs were printed.

The chorus members used drums. Some were big and some were small.

In the Gayak church, they sang seven songs. Only the first several lines are translated here. M. refers to the main singer. C. refers to the chorus. The sixth hymn was sung in Giziga. The rest were all sung in Fulfulde.

(1) Alleluia, Jesus comes

(M.) Alleluia, Jesus comes.

Welcome.

Welcome, Jesus.

(C.) Alleluia, Jesus comes.

Welcome.

(M.) Jesus is born today.

(C.) Alleluia, Jesus comes.

Welcome.

(M.) Shepherds went quickly.

(C.) Alleluia, Jesus comes.

Welcome.

(M.) They found Mary.

(2) Let's follow God's words

(M.) You saw people.

(C.) Let's follow God's words. This world. This world is vain.

(M.) We'll go to heaven.

(C.) Let's follow God's words. This world. This world is vain.

(M.) Jesus came into the world.

(C.) Let's follow God's words. This world. This world is vain.

(M.) Brothers and sisters, come.

(3) God wants everybody to come to Him

- (M.) God wants everybody to come to Him.*
- (C.) Yes, He wants everybody to come to Him.*
- (M.) He loves the people in the world.*
- (C.) Yes, He wants everybody to come to Him.*
- (M.) Come and repent.*
- (C.) Yes, He wants everybody to come to Him.*
- (M.) Jesus loves everybody.*

(4) False prophets are preaching

- (M.) People of the world, false prophets are preaching.*
- (C.) False prophets are preaching.*
- (M.) People of the world.*
- (C.) False prophets are preaching.*
- (M.) They are preaching.*
- (C.) False prophets are preaching.*
- (M.) You, my father.*

(5) There are sins of the world in men's work

- (M.) Oh, oh, oh, oh, oh, the are many sins in the world.*
- (C.) There are sins of the world in men's work.*
- (M.) We are men.*
- (C.) There are sins of the world in men's work.*
- (M.) Satan, there is Satan.*
- (C.) There are sins of the world in men's work.*
- (M.) Jesus came into the world.*

(6) Jesus is calling you. Come here

- (M.) Jesus is calling you. You do not know that.*
- (C.) Jesus is calling you. Come here.*
- (M.) My father, you do not know that.*
- (C.) Jesus is calling you. Come here.*
- (M.) Come. Come.*

(7) Jesus is coming

(M.) Jesus is coming.

(C.) Jesus will come back. He'll take believers. He'll come back in clouds.

(M.) Come and see.

(C.) Jesus will come back. He'll take believers. He'll come back in clouds.

(M.) My friends.

(C.) Jesus will come back. He'll take believers. He'll come back in clouds.

(M.) My brothers and sisters.

(10/2/1991)

173. Hymns sung in the Moogaza'ng protestant church

When I preached in the Moogaza'ng church located in my uncle's compound, we heard the following five hymns. The first one is a translation from the French version. The rest are composed locally. Only the second one was sung in Giziga. The rest are in Fulfulde. The first one was sung in unison. The rest were sung antiphonally.

(1) Sitting by Jesus's feet

*Sitting by Jesus's feet
is more comfortable than anything.
There is a good place near Jesus.
I want to take a rest there.
Sitting by Jesus's feet
I am thinking about my life.
I did not like Jesus's words.
Now they stay in my heart.*

*Sitting by Jesus's feet.
For he saved my life.*

(2) Jesus is calling you

- (M.) Jesus is calling you.*
- (C.) Jesus is calling you.*
- (M.) He will give you eternal life.*
- (C.) He will give you eternal life.*
- (M.) There is no peace in the world.*
- (C.) There is no peace in the world.*
- (M.) People are doing only something.*
- (C.) They only get things.*
- (M.) Those who look for witchcraft.*

(3) Let's deliver God's words

- (M.) God called us to do the work.*
- (C.) Let's deliver God's words.*
- (M.) Joseph came and brought God's words.*
- (C.) Let's deliver God's words.*
- (M.) God entrusted us with the work. We preach the Gospel.*
- (C.) Let's deliver God's words.*
- (M.) Come and repent quickly, for God called us.*
- (C.) Let's deliver God's words.*
- (M.) Let's not abandon them.*

(4) We'll be glad indeed. Jesus will come back.

- (M.) It is a big joy, for God sent Christ.*
- (C.) We'll be glad indeed. Jesus will come back.*
- (M.) It is a big joy, for God sent Christ.*
- (C.) Alleluia, indeed. Jesus is coming.*
- (M.) God sent the apostles for people to come and repent.*
- (C.) Alleluia, indeed. Jesus is coming.*
- (M.) God loves the world. Let people come and repent.*

(5) *Nobody knows when. Jesus may come the day after tomorrow, indeed.*

(M.) *Nobody knows when.*

(C.) *Nobody knows when. Jesus may come the day after tomorrow, indeed.*

(M.) *Do you know when?*

(C.) *Nobody knows when. Jesus may come the day after tomorrow, indeed.*

(M.) *Keep thinking so.*

(C.) *Nobody knows when. Jesus may come the day after tomorrow, indeed.*

(M.) *Come.*

(C.) *Nobody knows when. Jesus may come the day after tomorrow, indeed.*

(M.) *Think about it.*

(19/1/1990)

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Eldridge, Mohammadou

1976 *L'histoire des Peuls Férôbé du Diamaré, Maroua et Pétété.*

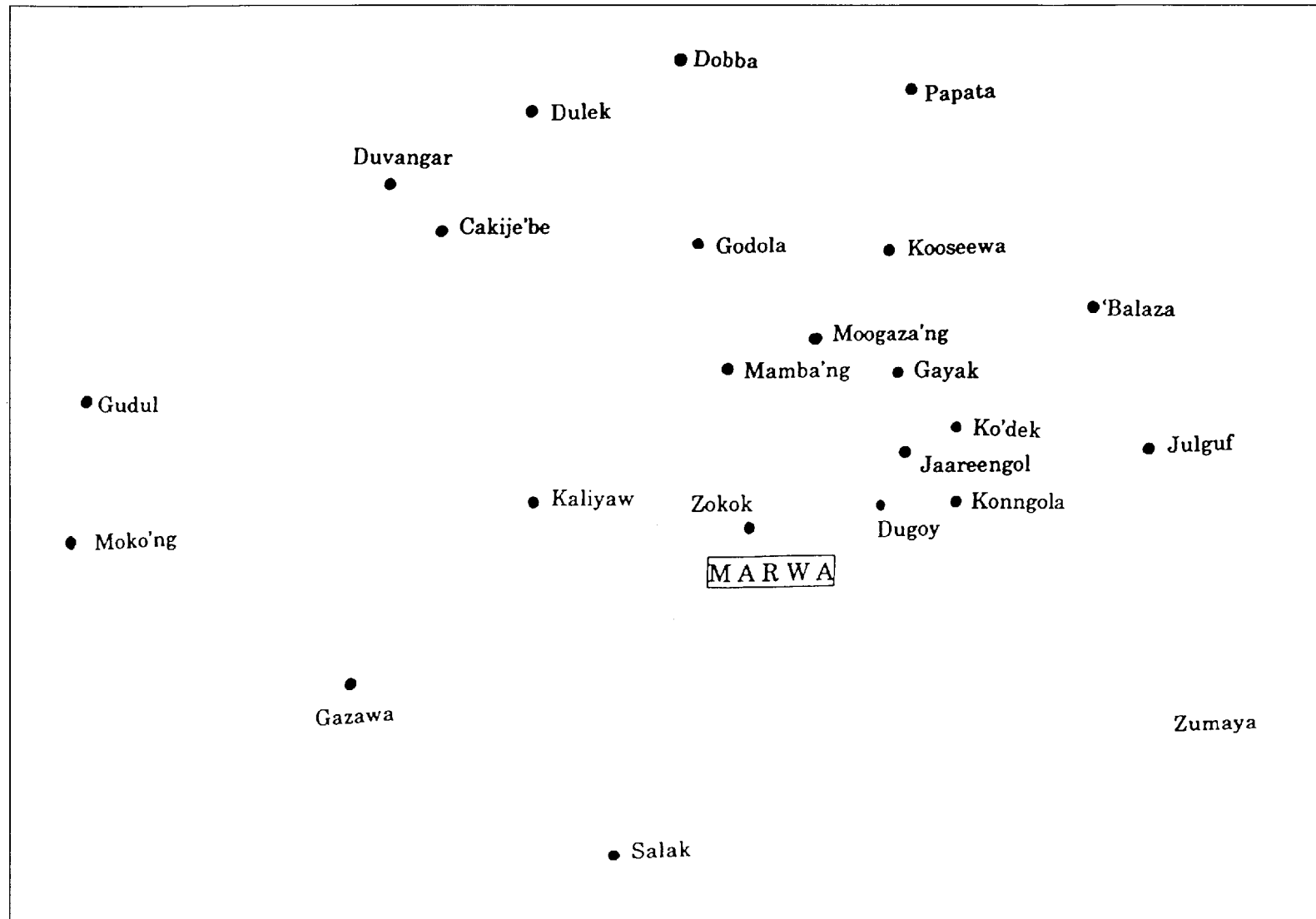
African Languages and Ethnography III, edited by

*Morimichi Tomikawa, Institute For the Study of Languages
and Cultures of Asia and Africa, Tokyo University of*

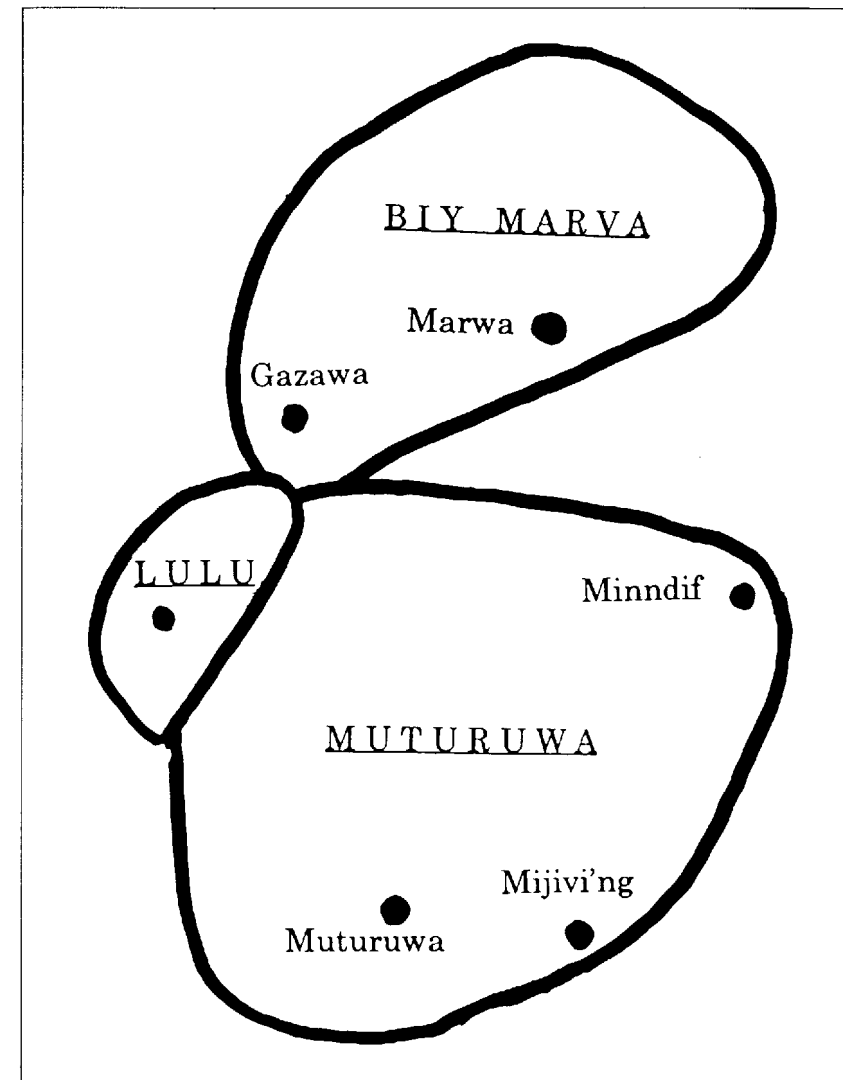
Foreign Languages.

Seignobos, Christian, and Iyébi-Mandjek, Olivier (éd.)

2000 *Atlas de la Province Extrême-Nord, Cameroun, Paris.*



GURE LESDI JAMA'AARE
(THE VILLAGES IN DIAMARE)



LESDI GIZIGA'EN
(THE GIZIGA LAND)

